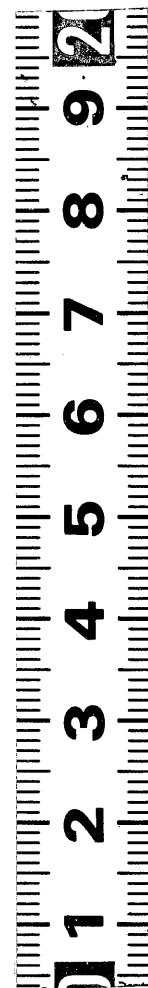


10-1



Anglia Notitia;
OR,
THE PRESENT
STATE
OF
England:

Together with
DIVERS REFLECTIONS
UPON
The Antient State thereof.

By EDWARD CHAMBERLAYNE
Dr of Laws and Fellow of the Royal Society.

The FOURTH EDITION,
Corrected, and newly Augmented.

In Magnis voluisse sat est —

In the SAVOY,
Printed by T. N. for John Martyn Printer to the
Royal Society, and are to be sold at the Sign
of the Bell a little without Temple-Bar.
M D C L X X.

To the Right Honourable

CHARLES

Earl of *CARLILE*, Vicount

Howard of Morpeth, Baron *Dacre* of *Gilfland*, Lord Lieutenant in the Counties of *Cumberland* and *Westmerland*, One of the Lords of His Majesties Most Honourable *Privy Council*, heretofore Lord Ambassador Extraordinary to Three of the Northern Sovereign Princes, and late Ambassador Extraordinary to the High and Mighty Prince *CHARLES* the Eleventh of that Name, King of *Swethland*.

My LORD,

As those very Honourable Employments abroad (whereof His Majesty hath judged Your Excellency worthy, not only for Your most Noble Extraction and Eminent Degree, but also for your excellent Endowments both Intellectual and Moral) have rendred you abundantly able to

A 2 under-

0003

understand thoroughly the Present State of divers Foreign Countreys; so that high Dignity wherewith the King hath been pleased to honour you at home (by placing you as one of his most faithfull and vigilant Centinels in the Highest Watch-Tower of his Chief Kingdom, viz. in that Noble, Honourable, and Reverend Assembly of Privy Counsellors;) hath made you very capable of giving a large and judicious Account of the Present State of this Nation, without any the least assistance from this Treatise; yet because your Excellency hath intimated some approbation of the Design, and lately owned the Designer for your Servant, he is encouraged to present the same to Your Excellency; imploring your Patronage thereof, and the continuance of your favour and assistance towards the like future endeavours of

My Lord,
Your Excellencies most humbly
devoted Servant,
Edw. Chamberlayne.



To the Reader.

IN this small Treatise the Reader may not reasonably expect to have his Fancy much delighted,

(Ornari res ipsa negat, contenta doceri.)

but only to have his understanding informed; and therefore the Author hath industriously avoided all curious Flowers of Rhetorick, and made it his whole business to feed his Reader with abundant variety of Excellent Fruits.

Here are interspersed some Observations, which though already known to many English men, yet may be unknown to most Strangers and Foreigners, for the information of whom this Book is secondarily intended; and for that end is lately translated into the French Tongue, and printed at Amsterdam; whereby may be extinguish'd in some measure the Thirst which Foreigners generally

To the Reader.

generally have to know the *Present State* of this *considerable Monarchy*.

Although the main aim is to inform all men of the *Present State* of this Kingdom, yet divers *Reflections* are made upon the *Past State* thereof; that so by comparing that with the present, some men may thereby not only be moved to endeavour the *Restoration* of what was heretofore better, and the *abolition* of what is now worse; but also in some measure may *foresee* without consulting our *Astrologers* and *Apocalyptick Men*, what will be the *Future State* of this Nation: according to that Excellent Saying, *Qui respicit praterita & inspicit presentia, prospicit etiam & futura.* A good *Historian* by running back to *Ages past*, and by standing still and viewing the *present times*, and comparing the one with the other, may then run forward, and give a *Verdict* of the *State* almost *Prophetick*.

In the many *Reflections* upon the *Antient State* of *England*, frequent use is made of divers *grave Authors*, as of *Glanville*, *Braeton*, *Britton*, of *Horn* in his *Mirror of Justice*, *Fleta*, *Fortescue*, *Linwood*, *Stamford*, *Smith*, *Cosins*, *Camden*,
Cook,

To the Reader.

Cook, *Spelman*, *Selden*, &c. And for the *Present State*, Consultation was had with several *eminently learned Personages* yet living, to the end that the *Reader* might receive at least some *satisfaction* in every particular, without the trouble and charges of a great *Library*. And as the *Author* doth sometimes use both the *Words* of the *Living* and the *Writings* of the *Dead*, without quoting any, to avoid *Ostentation*; so he hopes that this *ingenuous Confession* being made at first, no man will be offended, though he give no notice when the *Observation* is theirs, and when it is his own; having taken special care that both in theirs and in his own, there should be nothing but the *truth*: so that although the *Reader* not perceiving every where by what *Authority* divers things are averred, may be apt to suspect that some things are *gratis dicta*, yet if it shall please him to make search, he will find that generally they are *verè & cum autoritate dicta*.

However in a *Subject* so *multiform* as this, where so many *Marks* are aimed at, no wonder if in some the *Author* hath not hit the *White*, but wheresoever it hath appeared

To the Reader.

peared to him to have been missed in the former impression, it is in this duly corrected.

Brevity and a *Laconique Stile* is aimed at all along, that so there might be *Magnum in Parvo*, that it might be *mole minimus*, though *Remagnus*; that the whole State of *England* might be seen at once, *ὡς ἐν τριγῶ*, or, as in a Map; that, as it will be a necessary Book for all Englishmen at all times: so every one might without trouble always carry it about with him as a *Companion* to consult upon all occasions.

For completing this Structure, Materials were provided by the Author to give also a brief account of the *particular Government of England*, Ecclesiastical, Civil, and Military; of all the Courts of Justice, of all Chief Offices belonging to these Courts; of the City of *London*; of the Two Universities; of the Innes of Court and *Chancery*; of the Colledge of Physitians; of the Royal Society, &c. All which, for want of leasure now, is reserved for a Treatise apart.

The

The TABLE.

A.	
Abſence of the King,	167
Admiral,	230
Advent Sunday,	98
Ayre of England,	6
Apparel,	85
Apprentices,	463
Arch-Biſhop,	344, 345
Arch-Deacons,	341, 342
Armes of England,	111
Of the Queen,	196
Attire of Engliſh,	85
Kings at Armes,	272
Dukes of Armes,	ib.
B.	
Baronets,	442
Barons,	407, 425, 433
Biſhops,	338
Suffragan Biſhops,	339
Buggery,	67
Buildings of England,	29
C.	
Adets,	175
Cambridge-Duke,	205
Canterbury Arch-biſhop,	34
D.	
Kings Chappel,	254
Chaplains,	269
Lord High Chamberlain of England,	226
Lord Chancellour,	219
Children,	484
Civilians,	292
Civil Government of the Kings Court,	241
Clergy,	336, 337, 370
Climate of England,	2
Clerk of the Market,	282
Cofferer,	247, 250
Commodities of England,	9
The Commons of Eng.	441
Computation Eng.	93
Comptroller,	250
Lord High Conſtable,	227
Privy-Counſellour,	284
The Counting-Houſe,	247, 248
Kings Court, &c.	233
The Queen Conſorts Court	312
Crown, Succeſſion thereto,	164
D.	
The Day beginning,	99
Day-Labourers,	445
Deans,	

The Table.

Deans,	400, 401	Esquires,	456
Diet of England,	82		
Dimensions of England,	2		
Their Dispositions,	61, 62,		
Divinity of the King,	152		
Division of England,	3		
Dominions of the King,	115		
Drinking Excess,	64		
Dukes,	404, 423, 428		
Dukes at Arms,	272		
Duke of York,	201		
E.			
E Arts,	405, 424, 429		
Easter to find,	97		
D. Edgar,	205		
Eating,	82		
Englands Air,	6		
Buildings,	29		
Climate,	2		
Commodities,	9		
Division,	3		
Dimensions,	2		
Inhabitants,	31		
Measures,	26		
Moneys,	16		
Name,	1		
Soyle,	7		
Sons and Daughters,	173		
Weights,	23		
		F.	
		F elonies,	72
		G.	
		G entlemen,	457
		St. George,	446
		Government of Engl.	101
		Government Civil of the	
		Kings Court	241
		Government Ecclesiastical	
		Military,	294
		Green-Cloth Court,	243
		H.	
		H andy Crafts,	469
		Heralds,	273
		Master of the Horse,	245
		Humors of English,	62, 58
		Husbandman,	48
		Husbands,	468
		I.	
		J ews in England,	57
		Incapacity of the King,	167
		Inhabitants of Engl.	31
		Judges,	287
		Kings	

The Table.

	K.		N.
K ings at Arms,	272	N ame of England,	1
The Kings Evil,	160	Of King,	107
King of Engl.	107, &c.	Of Queen,	169
The present King,	182	Of the present King,	182
Knights 444, of the Gar-		Names and Surnames,	87
ter,	446, 452,	Nobility,	403, &c.
Knights Bannerets,	453	Their Priviledges,	412
Knights of the Bath,	454	Non-Conformists,	53, 56
Knights-Bachelors,	454	Number of inhabitants,	80
		Numbering, the English	
	L.	Manner,	99
L anguage of Eng.	80		
Larceny petit.	75	O.	
Laws,	33	G reat Officers of the	
Liberty of the subjects,	471	Crown,	216
		Office of King,	132
		Orange Prince,	206
	M.	P.	
M anners of the Eng-		P apists,	46, 56
lish,	57	Patrimony of the	
Marquesses,	405, 424	King,	117
Earl Marshal,	218	Perjury,	76
Lady Mary,	204	Person of the King,	127
Master of the Ceremonies,	272	Peers,	404, 412, &c.
		Power of the King,	133
Mr. of the Horse,	245	Poysoning,	67
Mr. of the Household,	251	Post-Masters,	277
Mr. of the Ordnance,	276	Presbyterians,	56, 57
Measures,	26	Prerogative of the King,	133
Mercat Clerk,	282	Of the Queen,	170
Merchants,	444	Princes of the Blood,	201
Minority,	166	Priviledges of Bishops,	
Monarchies,	102	357, 358, &c.	
Money,	16	Arch-	

The Table.

Arch-bishop,	344, 345	Stabbing,	67
Gentry,	457	Stature of England,	82
Privy-Seal,	224	Steward of Engl.	217
Punishments,	70	Strength of Engl.	123
Q ueen of England,		Subjects Liberty,	47
Consort,	162	Succession,	164
Mother,	197	Supremacy,	147
The present Queen of Eng-			
lands,	193	T rade-men,	469, 470
Querries,	280	Treason,	71
R ecreations of Eng-		Treasurer of England,	222
land,	86	Treasurer of the Kings	
Religion of England,	43	House,	247, 249
Respect to the King,	162	V ices,	63, 64
Royal Society,	490, 491	Vicounts,	406, 424
Revenue of the King,	119	Villanage,	488, 489
Rupert Prince,	212	W ar-drobes,	274
S ecretaries of State,	293	Weights,	23
Sergeants at Arms,	268	Wives,	476
Sergeants at Law,	291	Women,	475
Servants,	487	T he Tears beginning,	98
Shop-keepers,	469, 470	Yeomen,	61, 67, 467
Slaves,	488	York Arch-bishop,	355
Sons and Daughters of		York Duke his Court,	324
England,	173	Dutchess her Court,	331
Sovereignty,	147		
Seyle of England,	17		
The Three States of Eng-			
land,	336		

(1)



OF
ENGLAND
in General.

CHAP. I.

Of its Name, Climate, Dimen-
sions, Division, Air, Soil, Com-
modities, Moneys, Weights,
Measures, and Buildings.

England, the better part of the name.
best Island in the whole
world, anciently with Scot-
land, called Britain, and sometimes
Albion; was about 800 years after
the Incarnation of Christ (by special
Edict of King Egbert descended from
the Angles, a people of the Lower
Saxony, in whose possession the
greatest part of this Countrey then
was)

2 **The present State**

was) named *Angle* or *Englelond*, thence by the *French* called *Angleterre*, by the *Germans* *Engeland*, and by the *Inhabitants* *England*.

Climate. It is situated between the Degrees 17 and 24 of *Longitude*, equal with *Britany* and *Normandy* in *France*, and between 50 and 57 of Northern *Latitude*, equal with *Flanders*, *Zealand*, *Holland*, *Lower Saxony*, and *Denmark*.

The longest day in the most Northern part is 16 hours 44 minutes, and the shortest 7 hours 16 minutes.

Dimensions. It is in *length* 386 miles, in *breadth* 279, in *compass* (by reason of the many *Bays* and *Promontaries*) about 1300 miles; in *shape* triangular, contains by computation about 30 *Millions of Acres*, about the *thousandth* part of the *Globe*, and 333d part of the habitable earth, almost ten times as big as the *United Neatherlands*, five times as big as the

of England.

the *Spanish Neatherlands*; less than all *Italy* by almost one half, and in comparison of *France* is as 30 to 82.

That part of *Britain*, now called *Division* *England*, was in the time of the *Romans* divided into *Britannia Prima*, *Britannia Secunda*, and *Maxima Casariensis*. The first of these contained the South part of *England*, the second all that Western part now called *Wales*, and the third the Northern parts beyond *Trent*.

When the *Britains* had received the *Christian Faith*, they divided the same (for the better Government Ecclesiastical) into 3 *Provinces* or *Archbishopricks*; viz. the *Archbishoprick of London*, that contained *Britannia Prima*; the *Archbishoprick of York*, which contained that part called *Maxima Casariensis*; and the *Archbishoprick of Caerleon*, an antient great City of *South-Wales* upon the River *Uske*;

4 **The present State**

under which was *Britannia Secunda*. Afterward the Heathen Saxons over-running this Country, and dividing it into Seven Kingdoms, the King of *Kent* being first converted to the Christian Faith by St. *Austin*, who lived and was buried at *Canterbury*, the Archiepiscopal See of *London* was there placed, and the other of *Caerleon* was translated to St. *David*s in *Pembroke-shire*; and at last subjected to the See of *Canterbury*: the North part of *England* and all *Scotland* was put under the Archbishop of *York*, and all *England* divided into Dioceses, and in the year 630 it was for better Order and Government distinguisht into Parishes by the care and pains of *Honorius* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, almost 200 years before it was divided into Counties or Shires by King *Alfred*; by whom also those Shires (so called from the Saxon word *Scyre* a Partition or Division) were sub-divided into Hundreds, which perhaps at first contained

of **England.**

tained *ten Tythings*, and each Tything *ten Families*.

At present *England* according to its Ecclesiastical Government, is divided first into 2 Provinces or Archbishopricks, *viz. Canterbury* and *York*; those 2 Provinces into 26 Dioceses, which are again divided into 60 Archdeaconries, and those into Rural Deaneries, and those again into Parishes.

According to the Temporal Government of *England* it is divided now into 52 Counties or Shires, and those into Hundreds, Laths, Rapes, or Wapentakes (as they are called in some Counties) and those again into Tythings.

England without *Wales* is divided into 6 Circuits, allotted to the 12 Judges to hold Assizes twice a year (whereof more in a Treatise apart.) It is also divided by the Kings Justices in *Eyre*, and by the Kings at Arms into North and South; that is, all Counties upon the North and South side of *Trent*.

B 3

There

6 The present State

There are in all *England* 25 Cities, 641 great Towns, called Market Towns, and 9725 Parishes; under some of which are contained several Hamlets or Villages as big as ordinary Parishes.

Aire. The *Aire* is far more mild and temperate (if not more healthy) than any part of the *Continent* under the same *Climate*.

By reason of the warm vapours of the Sea on every side, and the very often Winds from the huge Western Sea, the *Cold* in *Winter* is less sharp than in some parts of *France* and *Italy*, though more Southern.

By reason of the continual blasts from Sea, the *Heat* in *Summer* is less scorching than in some parts of the *Continent*; that lies more Northern.

As in *Summer* the gentle *Winds* and frequent *Showres* qualifie all violent *Heats* and *Droughts*, so in *Winter* the *Frosts* do onely meliorate

of England.

rate the cultivated Soyle, and the *Snow* keep warm the tender Plants. In a word, here is no need of Stoves in *Winter*, nor *Grottes* in *Summer*.

It is blessed with a very fertile *Soyle*, wholesome *Soyle*, watered abundantly with *Springs* and *Streams*, and in divers parts with great *Navigable Rivers*; few barren *Mountains* or craggy *Rocks*, but generally gentle pleasant *Hills* and fruitful *Valleys*, apt for *Grain*, *Grass*, or *Wood*. The excellency of the English *Soyle* may be learnt (as *Varro* advised of *old*) from the *Complexion* of the *Inhabitants*, who therein excel all other Nations: or else from the high value put upon it by the *Romans* and the *Saxons*, who lookt upon it as such a precious spot of ground, that they thought it worthy to be fenced in like a *Garden-Plot* with a mighty *Wall* of fourscore miles in length, viz. from *Tinmouth* on the *German Sea* to *Solwey Frith* on the *Irish Sea* (whereby the *Caledonian Bores* might

might be excluded) and with a monstrous *Dike* of fourscore and ten miles, *viz.* from the Mouth of the River *Wy* to that of the River *Dee* (whereby the *Cambro-Britan-Foxes* might be kept out) lastly the excellency of her *Soyle* may also be learnt from those transcendent *Elogies* bestowed on her by Antient and Modern Writers, calling *England* the *Granary of the Western World*, the *Seat of Ceres*, &c. That her *Valleys* are like *Eden*, her *Hills* like *Lebanon*, her *Springs* as *Pisgab*, and her *Rivers* as *Jordan*. That she is a *Paradise of Pleasure*, and the *Garden of God*. *O fortunata & omnibus terris beatior Britannia, te omnibus caeli ac soli ditavit Natura, tibi nihil inest quod vita offendat, tibi nihil deest quod vita desideret, ita ut alter orbis extra orbem poni ad delicias humani generis videaris.* O happy and blessed *Britanie*, above all other Countries in the World, *Nature* hath enriched thee with all the blessings of *Heaven*

ven and *Earth*. Nothing in thee is hurtful to Mankind, nothing wanting in thee that is desirable, in so much that thou seemest another World placed besides, or without the great World, meerly for the delight and pleasure of Mankind.

As it is divided from the rest of *Comme-* the World, so by reason of its great *ditics.* abundance of all things necessary for the life of Man, it may *without* the contribution of any other part of the World, more easily subsist than any of its Neighbouring Countries.

Terra suis contenta bonis, non indiga mercis.

First, For *Food*, what plenty every where of *Sheep*, *Oxen*, *Swine*, *Fallow Deer*, and *Coneys*? what plenty of *Hens*, *Ducks*, *Geeze*, *Turkeys*, and *Pigeons*? of *Swans*, *Peacocks*, *Pheasants*, *Partridges*,
B 5 Sand-

Sandlings, Knot, Curlew, Bayning, Dotterel, Ree, Chur, Ruff, Maychit, Stint, Sea-Plover, Pewits, Redshanks, Woodcocks, Snipes, Plovers, Quails, Rayles, Larks, and Wheat-ears? of Herons, Cranes, Bitters, Bustards, Heath-Cocks, More-Poules, or Grouse Thrushes, Thrustles, Blackbirds, and Veldevers? What plenty of Salmon, Trouts, Lampernes, Graylings, Chards, Gudgeons, Carps, Tench, Lampreys, Pikes, Perches, Eeles, Bremes; Roch, Cressfish, Flounders, Plaice, Shads, Mullers? What great abundance of Herrings, Pilchards, Oysters, Shrimps, Escalops, Cocles, Mussels, Maids, Scate, Humber-Cod, Conger, Turbots, Fresh Ling, Lobsters, Crabs, Mackerel, Whitings, Soles, Smelts, Sprats, Prawnes, Ruffes, Thornback, &c. What great plenty of Apples, Pears, Plums, and Cherries? How doth England abound with *Wheat, Barly, Rye, Pulse, Beans, and Oates*, with excellent *Butter and Cheese*; with most sorts of

of *Edible Roots and Herbs*. It wants not *Red Deer, Hare, Goats, Roe, &c.* It wants not *Wild-Ducks, Wild-Geese, Puffins, God-Wits*, and many other kind of Sea-fowl. It wants not *Apricocks, Peaches, Nectarins, Grapes, Figgs, Melons, Quinces, &c. Walnuts, Small Nuts, Filberts, Chesnuts, Medlers, Raspices, Strawberries, Currans, Gooseberries, &c.* Lastly, for *Drinks*, England abounds with *Beer, Ale, Sider, Perry*, and in some places with *Merbeglin, or Mede*.

Now of all these things there is such a constant continuance, by reason of the *Clemency* of the *Climat*, that scarce the least *Famine* which frequenteth other Countries, hath been felt in *England* these 400 years.

Then for *Rayment*, *England* produceth generally not onely very *Fine Wooll*, which makes our Cloth more *lasting* than other Countrey Cloth, and better *conditioned* against *Wind* and *Weather*; but also such great *abundance* of *Wooll*, that not onely all

all sorts from the highest to the lowest are clothed therewith; but so much hath been heretofore transported beyond the Seas, that in honour of the *English Wooll*, that then brought such plenty of Gold into the Territories of *Charles the puissant and bold Duke of Burgundy* (where the Staple for English Wooll was in those dayes kept) he instituted that famous *Military Order of the Golden Fleece*, at this day in highest esteem with the whole *House of Austria*. This abundance and cheapnesse of Wooll in *England*, proceeds not onely from the *goodness* of the *Soyle*, but also from the *freedom* from *Wolves* and from excessive *Heats* and *Colds*, which in other Countries create a great charge of a constant guarding their Sheep, and housing them by Night, and sometimes by Day. Also for advancing the Manufacture of Cloth, that necessary Earth called *Fullers Earth*, is nowhere else produced in that abundance and excellency as in *England*.

Beside,

Beside, there is in *England* great plenty of excellent *Leather* for all sorts of uses; nor wants it *Hemp* and *Flax*, at least not ground fit to produce them.

For *Building* it wants not *Timber*, nor *Iron*, *Stone*, nor *Slate*, *Brick* nor *Tiles*; *Marble* nor *Alabaster*, *Mortar* nor *Lime*, &c. *Lead* nor *Glass*.

For *Firing*, either *Wood*, *Sea-Coal*, or *Pit-Coal*, almost every where to be had at reasonable rates.

For *Shipping*, no where better *Oak*, no where such *Knee-Timber*, as they call it; or *Iron* to make serviceable and durable *Guns*.

For *War*, for *Coach*, for *Highway*, and *Hunting*, no where such plenty of *Horses*; also for *Plough*, *Cart*, and *Carriages*: insomuch as *Mules* and *Asses* so generally made use of in *France*, *Italy*, and *Spain*, are utterly despised in *England*.

For *Dogs* of all sorts and sizes, as *Mastiffs*, *Greyhounds*, *Spaniels* for *Land* and *Water*, *Hounds* for *Stag*,
Buck,

The present State

Buck, Fox, Hare, or Otter, Terriers, Tumblers, Lurchers, Setting-Dogs, Curs, Little Lap-Dogs, &c.

Moreover, *England* produceth besides a mighty quantity of *Tinne, Lead, and Iron*, some *Brass* and *Copperas*, much *Alome, Salt, Hops, Saffron*, and divers other beneficial Commodities; it wants not *Mines of Silver*, yielding more in their small quantities of *Ore*, and so richer than those of *Potosi* in the *West-Indies*, whence the *King of Spain* hath most of his *Silver*; those yielding usually but one *Ounce* and a half of *Silver* in one hundred *Ounces* of *Ore*; whereas these in *Wales, Cornwall, Lancashire*, and the *Bishoprick of Durham*, yield ordinarily 6 or 8 *Ounces per Cent.* but these lying deep, are hard to come unto, and Workmen dear, which is otherwise in *Potosi*.

It wants not *Hot Baths*, and abounds in *Medicinal Springs*.

Vineyards have been heretofore common in most of the Southern and

of England.

and Middle Parts of *England*, and *Silks* might be here produced, as it was once designed by *King James*; but a great part of the Natives prone to *Navigation*, supplying *England* at a very cheap rate with all sorts of *Wines, Silks*, and all other Forreign Commodities (according to that of an ancient Poet;

Quicquid amat luxus, quicquid desiderat usus,

Ex te proveniet vel aliunde tibi) it hath been found far better *Husbandry* to employ *English* ground rather for producing *Wool, Corn, and Cattel*, for which it is most proper. In a word, though some Countries excel *England* in some things, yet in general there is no one Country under Heaven whose *Aire* is better stored with *Birds and Fowls, Seas, Rivers, and Ponds* with *Fishes, Fields* with all sorts of *Corn, the Pastures* with *Cattel, the Forrests, Parks, Warrens, and Woods* with *Wild Beasts* onely for Recreation and Food; the *Mines* with *Metals, Coals,*

The present State

Coals, and other Minerals; where are fewer ravenous and hurtful Beasts, fewer venomous Serpents or noisome Flies; fewer Droughts, Inundations, or Dearth; fewer unwholsome Serenes, Pestilential Airs, Tempestuous Hurricanes, or Destructive Earthquakes: Lastly, where there is a greater abundance of all things necessary for mans life, and more especially for all kind of Food, in so much that it hath been judged that there is yearly as much Flesb and Beer consumed in England by overplentiful Tables, as would well serve three times the number of People. Add to all this, that being encompassed with the Sea and well furnisht with Ships and abundance of commodious and excellent Havens and Ports, it excels for safety and security, (which is no small praise) all the Neighbouring Countries, if not all the Countries in the World.

Moneys. At first all Nations bartred and exchanged one Commodity for another,

of England.

other, but that being found troublesome; by a kind of Custom, good liking, or usage, amongst all Civilized Nations, Silver and Gold, as most portable, pliable, beautiful, and less subject to rust, hath been as early as the dayes of Abraham, chosen to be the Instruments of Exchange and measure of all things, and were at first paid onely by Weight, till the Romans about 300 years before the Birth of Christ, invented Coyning or Stamping Gold and Silver.

When Julius Caesar first entred this Island, here were current instead of Money, certain Iron Rings, afterwards the Romans brought in the use of Gold, Silver, and Brass Coyns.

In the time of King Richard the First, Moneys coyned in the East parts of Germany being for its parity highly esteemed, some of those Easterlings were sent for over, and employed in our Mint, and thence our Money called Esterling or Sterling Money, as some think: (as the first

The present State

first Gold coyned in *England*, was by King *Edward* the Thrd, and the Pieces called *Florences*, because *Florentines* were the first Coyners thereof) though others say of the *Saxon* word *Ster*, *Weighty*.

King *Edward* the First since the *Norman* Conquest, established a certain *Standard* for *Coyn* in this manner: Twenty four Grains made one *Penny Sterling*, 20 *Penny* weight one *Ounce*, and 12 *Ounces* made a *Pound Sterling*, consisting of 20 *Shillings*. Of these 12 *Ounces*, 11 *Ounces* two *Penny* weight *Sterling*, was to be of pure *Silver*, called *Leaf Silver*, and the weight of about 18 *Penny Sterling* in allay the *Minter* might add: So that anciently a *Pound Sterling* was a *Pound* of *Troy* weight, whereas now a *Pound Sterling* is but the *third* part of a *Pound Troy*, and little more than a *4th* part of *Avoirdupois* weight.

The Money of *England* was abated and falsified for a long time, till Queen *Elizabeth* in the year 1605,
10

of England.

to her great praise called in all such Money; since which time no base Money hath been coined in *England*, but onely of pure *Gold* and *Silver*, called *Sterling* Money, onely of later times, in relation to the necessity of the *Poor*, and Exchange of great Money, a small piece of *Brass* called a *Farthing*, or Fourth part of a *Penny*, hath been permitted to be coined, but no man enforced to receive them in pay for Rent or Debt; which cannot be affirmed of any other State or Nation in the *Christian* World; in all which there are several sorts of *Copper* Money as current with them for any payment as the purest *Gold* or *Silver*.

No Moneys in any Mint are made of pure *Silver*, because *Silver* in its purity is almost as flexible as *Lead*; and therefore not so useful, as when hardned with *Copper*.

Gold minted pure would also be too flexible, and therefore is in all Mints allayed with some *Copper*; and most Mints differ in more or less allay.
The

The present State

The Ordinary Silver Coyns at present in *England*, are according to weight, either the Ounce *Troy*, the half Ounce, the 5th part, 10th part, 15th part, 20th part, 30th part, or 60th part; thus denominated, *The Crown, Half Crown, Shilling, Six Pence, Four Pence, Three Pence, Two Pence, a Penny.*

The Standard of *Sterling Silver* in *England* is *Eleven Ounces and Two Penny weight of Fine Silver*, and 18 *Penny weight of Alloy of Copper* out of the Fire, and so proportionably; so that 12 Ounces of pure Silver, without any alloy, is worth 3 *l. 4 s. 6 d.* and an Ounce is worth 5 *s. 4 d. 1 ob.* but with alloy is worth but 3 *l.* and the Ounce 5 *s.*

The Ordinary English Gold Coyns are now only the old *Carolus*, or 20 *s.* Piece, which by a late Proclamation is current at 21 *s. 4 d.* it weigheth 5 Penny weight 20 Grains. The *New Guinea* 20 *s.* weigheth 5 penny weight 10 Grains.

The

of England.

The Standard of the *English Carolus* piece, or Ordinary *Gold*, is in the pound weight *Troy* 22 *Carrats* of Fine *Gold* and 2 *Carrats* of Alloy Silver or Copper; that is, 11 Ounces of Fine *Gold* and one Ounce of Alloy Silver or Copper.

The *Spanish, French, and Flemish Gold* is of equal fineness with the *English.*

The *English Silver Money* hath less Alloy than the *French or Dutch.*

The *Moneyers* divide the Pound weight into 12 Ounces *Troy.*

The	}	Pen. weight	}	into	20 Pen. w.
					24 Grains.
					20 Mites.
					24 Droites.
					20 Perits.
					24 Blanks.

The *English Silver* is coined at 3 *l. 2 s.* the pound of *Troy* weight, the 2 *s.* being allowed the Minters for Coinage.

The *English Gold* is coined at pre-

The present State

present at 44*l.* 10*s.* the pound Troy weight, whereof 15*s.* is allowed the Minters for Coinage.

So that now the proportion of Gold to Silver in *England*, is as 1 to 14 and about $\frac{2}{3}$, that is to say, one Ounce of Gold is worth in Silver 14 Ounces and about $\frac{2}{3}$ or 3*l.* 14*s.* 2*d.* of English Money.

That the English Coin may want neither the *purity* nor the *weight* required, it was most wisely and carefully provided, that once every year the *Chief Officers* of the *Mint* should appear before the *Lords of the Council* in the *Star-Chamber* at *Westminster*, with some Pieces of all sorts of Moneys coined the foregoing year; taken at adventure out of the *Mint*, and kept under several Locks by several persons till that appearance, and then by a *Jury* of 24 able *Goldsmiths* in the presence of the said *Lords*, every Piece is most exactly assayed and weighed.

Since the happy restoration of His Majesty now reigning, the coin-

ing

of England.

ing or stamping of Money by *Hammers* hath been laid aside, and all stamp'd by an Engine or Skrew; whereby it is come to pass that our Coins for neatness, gracefulness, and security from counterfeiting, do surpass all the most excellent Coins, not only of the Romans, but of all the Modern Nations in the World.

For *Weights* and *Measures* at present used in *England*, there are very many excellent Statutes and Ordinances, and abundance of care taken by our Ancestors to prevent all cheating and deceit therein.

By the 27th Chapter of *Magna Charta* the *Weights* and *Measures* ought to be the same over all *England*, and those to be according to the *Kings Standards* of *Weights* and *Measures* kept in the *Exchequer* by a special Officer of his House, called the *Clerk* or *Comptroller* of the *Market*.

Of *Weights* there are two sorts used at present thorowout all *England*, viz. *Troy Weight* and *Avoirdupois*.

24 The present State

du pois. In *Troy weight* 24 grains of Wheat make a *Penny weight Sterling*, 20 *Penny weight* make an *Ounce*, 12 *Ounces* make a *Pound*; so there are 480 Grains in the *Ounce*, and 5760 Grains in the *Pound*.

By this Weight are weighed *Pearls*, *Pretious Stones*, *Gold*, *Silver*, *Bread*, and all manner of *Corn* and *Grain*; and this Weight the *Apothecaries* do or ought to use, though by other Divisions and Denominations: their least Measure is a *Grain*.

20 Grains	} make	(a Scruple,	} mark	} 3
3 Scruples		(a Drach.		
8 Drachmes		(an Ounce,		
12 Ounces		(a Pound,		

Avoir du pois hath 16 *Ounces* to the *pound*, but then the *Ounce Avoir du pois* is lighter than the *Ounce Troy* by 42 Grains in 480, that is near a 12th part; so that the *Avoir du pois Ounce* containeth but

of England.

438 Grains, and is as 73 to 80, that is 73 *Ounces Troy* is as much as 80 *Ounces Avoir du pois*, and 60 *pound Avoir du pois* is equal to 73 *pounds Troy*, and 14 *Ounces Troy* and a half, and the 10th part of a *Troy Ounce* make 16 *Ounces Avoir du pois*.

By this Weight are weighed in *England* all *Grocery Wares*, *Fleish*, *Butter*, *Cheese*, *Iron*, *Hemp*, *Flax*, *Tallow*, *Wax*, *Lead*, *Steel*, also all things whereof comes waste; and therefore 112 *l. Avoir du pois* is called a *Hundred weight*, and 56 *l.* Half a *Hundred*, and 28 *l.* a *Quarter* of a *Hundred*, or a *Tod*. Eight *Pounds Avoir du pois* amongst the *Butchers* is called a *Stone*.

Note, That when *Wheat* is at 5 *s.* the *Bushel*, then the *Penny Wheaten Loaf* is by *Statute* to weigh 11 *Ounces Troy*, and 3 *Half Penny White Loaves* to weigh as much, and the *Household Penny-Loaf* to weigh 14 *Troy Ounces* and Two third parts of an *Ounce*; and so more or less proportionably.

26 The present State

Note also, That here, as in other Countrys, Silk-men use a Weight called *Venice Ounce*, which is 13 Penny weight and 12 Grains; so that 12 Ounces *Venice* is but 8 Ounces, 4 Penny *Troy*, and 9 Ounces *Avoirdupois*: but of this there is no Standard, nor doth the Magistrate allow of it.

Measures.

All Measures in England are either *Applicative* or *Receptive*.

The smallest *Mensura applicatio-nis* or *applicative* measure is a *Barly Corn*, whereof 3 in length make a fingers breadth or *Inch*, 4 *Inches* make a *Handful*, 3 *Handful* a *Foot*, 1 *Foot* and a half makes a *Cubit*, 2 *Cubits* a *Yard*, 1 *Yard* and a quarter makes an *Ell*, 5 *Foot* make a *Geometrical Pace*, 6 *Foot* a *Fathom*, 16 *Foot* and a half make a *Perch*, *Pole*, or *Rod*, 40 *Perch* make a *Furlong*, 8 *Furlongs*, or 320 *Perch* make an *English Mile*; which according to the Statute of 11 H. 7. ought to be 1760 *Yards*, or 5280 *Foot*,

of England.

Foot, that is 280 *Foot* more than the *Italian Mile*; 60 *Miles*, or more exactly 69 *English Miles* and a half, make a *Degree*, and 360 *Degrees*, or 25020 *Miles* compass the whole *Globe* of the *Earth*.

For measuring of Land in *England*, 40 *Perch* in length and 4 in breadth make an *Acre* of Land (so called from the *German* word *Acker*, and that from the *Latine* *Ager*) 30 *Acres* ordinarily make a *Yard-Land*, and one Hundred *Acres* are accounted a *Hide* of Land; but in this and also in some Weights and other Measures, the Custom of the place is otherwise, yet must be regarded.

In *France* about *Paris* 12 inches make a *foot*, 22 *foot* make a *Perch*, and 100 *Perches* make an *Arpent*.

Mensura Receptio-nis, or the *Receptive* Measures, are twofold; first of *Liquid* or *Moist* things, secondly of *Dry* things.

About a pound *Avoirdupois* makes the ordinary smallest *receptive* measure, called a *Pint*, 2 *Pints* make a

C 2 Quart,

28 **The present State**

Quart, 2 *Quarts* a *Pottle*, 2 *Pottles* a *Gallon*, 8 *Gallons* a *Firkin* of *Ale*: 9 *Gallons* a *Firkin* of *Beer*, 2 such *Firkins* or 18 *Gallons* make a *Kilderkin*, 2 *Kilderkins* or 36 *Gallons* make a *Barrel* of *Beer*, 1 *Barrel* and a half, or 54 *Gallons*, make a *Hogshead*; 2 *Hogsheads* make a *Pipe* or *Butt*, and 2 *Pipes* a *Tun*, consisting of 1728 *Pints* or *Pounds*.

A *Barrel* of *Butter* or *Soap* is the same with a *Barrel* of *Ale*.

The *English Wine Measures* are smaller than those of *Ale* and *Beer*, and hold proportion as 4 to 5; so that 4 *Gallons* of *Beer Measure* are 5 *Gallons* of *Wine Measure*, and each *Gallon* of *Wine* is 8 *pounds Troy weight*. Of these *Gallons*, a *Rundlet* of *Wine* holds 18, a *Tierce* of *Wine* holds 42 *Gallons*, a *Hogshead* 63 *Gallons*, a *Pipe* or *Butt* holds 126, and a *Tun* 252 *Gallons*, or 2016 *Pints*.

To measure dry things, as *Corn* or *Grain*, there is first the *Gallon*, which is bigger than the *Wine Gallon*,

of **England.**

lon, and less than the *Ale* or *Beer Gallon*, and is in proportion to them as 33 to 28 and 35, and is counted 8 *pounds Troy weight*. Two of these *Gallons* make a *Peck*, 4 *Pecks* a *Bushel*, 4 *Bushels* the *Comb* or *Curnock*, 2 *Curnocks* make a *Quarter*, and 10 *Quarters* a *Last* or *Weigh*, which contains 5120 *Pints*, and about so many *Pounds*; so that in a *Garrison* of 5000 men, allowing each but a *pound* of bread *per diem*, they will consume near a *Last* or 80 *Bushels* every day, and 250 *Men* in a *Ship of War* will drink a *Tun* of *Beer* in 2 days, allowing each man but his *Pottle per diem*.

Churches throughout all *England*, *Build-* and all publick *Edifices*, are gene- ings. rally of *Solid Stone*, covered with *Lead*; *Cathedral* and *Collegiate Churches* every where ample and magnificent; and the *Churches* in *Market-Towns* and *Opulent Villages* spacious and solid enough. *Houses* in *Cities*, that were heretofore

fore usually of *Wood*, are now built of good *Stone* or *Brick*, and covered with *Slate* or *Tile*; the Rooms within formerly *wainscotted*, are now *hung with Tapistry* or other convenient *Stuffe*; and all *Cieled* with *Plaster*, excellent against the rage of *Fire*, against the *Cold*, and to hinder the passage of all *dust* and *noise*.

The *Modern Buildings* have been far more *flight* and of less *continuance* than the *Antient*.

The *houses* of the *Nobles* and *Rich*, are abundantly furnished with *Pewter*, *Brass*, *Fine Linnen*, and *Plate*. The *mean Mechanicks* and *ordinary Husbandmen*, want not *Silver spoons*, or some *Silver plate* in their *Houses*.

The *Windowes* every where *glased*, not made of *Paper* or *Wood*, as is usual in *Italy* and *Spain*.

Chimmies in most places, no *Stoves*, although the far more *Southern* parts of *Germany* can hardly subsist in the *Winter* without them.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Of the Inhabitants, and therein of their Law, Religion, Manners, and Punishments; of their Number, Language, Stature, Dyet, Attire, Recreations, Names, and Surnames; of their Computation and manner of Numbring.

ENGLAND hath been possessed by five Inhabitants. several Nations, and coveted by many more, and no wonder so fair and rich a Lady should have many Lovers, it being a Country (as was said of the Tree in the midst of Paradise) good for food, pleasant to the eyes, and to be desired; whereas the High-lands of Scotland, Wales, Biscay, Switzerland, and other like Countries, continue still in the possession of their Aborigines, of the first that laid claim unto them, none since

C 4

The present State

since judging it worth their pains to dispossess them.

The first Inhabitants of *England* are believed to be the *Britains*, descended from the *Gauls*, whose language was once almost the same; subdued afterward by the *Romans*: who, by reason of their troubles nearer home, were constrained to abandon this Country about 400 years after *Christ*: whereupon the *Picts* Inhabitants of *Scotland*, invading the *Britains*, they call to their aid the *Saxons*; who chasing away the *Picts*, soon made themselves Masters of the *Britains*: but these not able to endure the heavy yoke of the *Saxons*, after many Battels and Attempts to recover their lost Liberties and Country, retired, or were driven some of them into *Britan* in *France*: from whence some think they first came; but most of them into the two utmost *Western barren*, and *mountainous* parts of this Country, called afterwards by the *Saxons Walisland*, instead of *Gaul-*
island,

of England.

island, as the *Germans* still call *Italy Walisland*, because inhabited by the *Cisalpine Gauls*; and the *French* call our Country of *Britains*, *Le Pais de Gales*.

The *Saxons* solely possess of all the best part of this *Isle*, were for a long time infested, and for some time almost subdued by the *Danes*, and afterwards wholly by the *Normans*, who drove not out the *Saxons*, but mixed with them; so that the *English blood* at this day is a mixture chiefly of *Norman* and *Saxon*, not without a tincture of *Danish*, *Romish* and *British* Blood.

The *English* according to several *Their* Matters and Parts of the Kingdom; *Laws.* are governed by several *Laws*, viz. *Common Law*, *Statute Law*, *Civil Law*, *Canon Law*, *Forest Law*, and *Martial Law*; besides particular Customs and *By-Laws*: Of all which in brief (intending in a Treatise apart to speak more largely of them in the Particular Government
of

34 **The present State**

of *England Ecclesiastique*, *Civil*, and *Military*, together with all the Courts and Officers thereto belonging.

Common-Law.

The *Common Law* of *England* is the Common Customs of the Kingdom, which have by length of time obtained the force of *Laws*: It is called *Lex non scripta* (not but that we have them written in the old *Norman Dialect*, which being no where vulgarly used, varies no more than the *Latin*, but) because it cannot be made by Charter or by Parliament; for those are alwayes matters of *Record*; whereas Customs are onely matters of *Fact*, and are no where but in the *Memory* of the *People*; and of all Laws must be the best for the *English*: for the written Laws made in *England* by Kings or Privy-Councils, as *antiently*, or by Parliaments, as of *later times*; are imposed upon the Subject before any probation or trial, whether they are beneficial to the Nation, or agreeable

of *England*.

agreeable to the Nature of the People; but Customs bind not the People till they have been tried and approved time out of mind; during which time no inconvenience arising to hinder, those Customs became *Laws*; and therefore when our Parliaments have altered any Fundamental points of our *Common-Law*, (as sometimes hath been done) those alterations have been by experience found so inconvenient, that the same Law by succeeding Parliaments hath soon been restored. This *Common-Law* is the Quintessence of the Customary Laws of the *Mercians*, prevailing before the Conquest in the Middle Counties of *England*, called the Kingdom of *Mercia*, and of the *Saxons* amongst the West and South parts, and of the *Danes* amongst the *East-Angles*, all first reduced into one body by King *Edward* the *Elder* about the year 900; which for some time almost lost, were revived by the good King *Edward* the *Confessor*,

36 The present State

for, and by Posterity named his Laws. To these the Conquerour added some of the good Customs of Normandy, and then his Successor King Edward the first having in his younger years given himself satisfaction in the glory of Arms, bent himself (like another Justinian) to endow his Estate with divers notable Fundamantal Laws, ever since practised in this Nation. The excellent conveniency and connaturalness of the Common Law of England to the temper of English Men, is such, that the serious consideration thereof induced King James in a Solemn Speech to prefer it as to this Nation, before the Law of Moses.

Statute-Law.

Where the Common-Law is silent, there we have excellent Statute Laws made by the several Kings of England, by and with the Advice and Consent of all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and with the Consent of all the Commons of England

of England.

England, by their Representatives in Parliament; whereunto the English easily submit, as made at their own earnest desire and request.

Where Common and Statute-Law Civil take no Cognizance, use is made of that Law of Laws called the Civil-Law; wherein is to be had what all the Wisest and Noblest Men of the most flourishing and puissant State that ever was in the World, could in the space of many hundred years by their own Wisdom or Reason devise, or from any other People learn: so that this Law may be lookt on as the Product of the Common reason of all Mankind, and fitted for the Interest and Welfare not of one Nation onely; but contemplating and taking care for the general affairs of all People. Of this Law use is made in all Ecclesiastical Courts of Bishops, Arch-deacons, Vicars-General, Chancellours, and Commissaries, when ever Cognizance is taken of Wills and Testaments,

The present State

ments, of Tythes, Oblations, Mortuaries; of Matrimony, Divorce, Adultery, Incest, Fornication, Chastity attempted; of Sacred Orders, Institutions to *Church-Livings*, Celebration of Divine Offices, Reparation of Churches, Dilapidations, Procurations; of Heresie, Apostasy, Atheisme, Schisme, Simony, Blasphemy, &c. So of this Law is made use in the Court of Admiralty, in all Affairs immediately relating to the Royal Fleets, to all other Vessels of Trade, and to their Owners, to Mariners, to Commanders at Sea, to Reprizals, to Pyracies, to Merchants Affairs, to all Contracts made at Sea or beyond Sea, in the way of Marine Trade or Commerce; to all matters touching Wrecks, *Flotsam*, *Fetsam*, *Laggam*; Marine Waifs, Deodans, &c. Moreover use is made of the Civil Law in the Court of the Earl Marshal, taking Cognizance of Crimes perpetrated out of *England*, of Contracts made in Foreign parts,

of

of England.

of Affairs of War within and without *England*; of Controversies about Nobility and Gentry, or bearing of Coats of Arms; of Precedency, &c. Of this Law much use is made in Treaties with Foreign Potentates, where many points are to be determined and concluded, according to the direction of this most excellent and generally approved Law; and for this cause Foreign Princes take especial care to choose such persons for their Embassadors as are skilled in the Civil Law, and this Policy was heretofore duly observed by our English Princes with very good success. Lastly, The two Universities of *England* serve themselves of the Civil Law, for by their Priviledges no Student is to be sued at *Common Law*, but in the Vicechancellours Court for Debts, Accounts, Injuries, &c.

The Canons of many Antient *Canon-*
General Councils of many National *Law.*
and Provincial English Synods, be-
sides

sides divers Decrees of the Bishops of *Rome* and Judgements of Antient Fathers had been received by the Church of *England*, and incorporated into the Body of the Canon Law: by which she ever did proceed in the exercise of her Jurisdiction, and doth still by vertue of the Statute 25 *Hen. 8.* so far as the said Canons and Constitutions are not repugnant to the Holy Scriptures, to the Kings Prerogative, or the Laws, Statutes, and Customs of this Realm; and those are called the Kings Ecclesiastical Laws, which have severall proceedings and severall ends from the Temporal Laws; these inflicting punishment upon the Body, Lands, and Goods, and to punish the outward man; but those *pro salute anima*, to reform the inward man; both joyning in this, to have the whole man outwardly and inwardly reformed.

The

The *Forest Laws* are peculiar *Forest-Laws*, different from the Common Law of *England*. *Forests* in *England* are exceeding antient and before the making of *Charta de Foresta*, Offences committed therein were punished at the pleasure of the King, in so sharp and grievous a manner (as still in *Germany*) that both Nobles and Common. did suffer many horrible inconveniencies and oppressions, and even in that Charter were some hard Articles, which the Clemency of gracious Kings have since by Statute thought fit to alter *Per Assisas Forestæ* in the time of *Edward 3. voluntas reputata fuit pro facto*; so that if a man be taken hunting a Deer, he may be arrested as if he had taken a Deer. The Forrester may take and arrest a man, if he be taken either at *Dog-draw*, *Stable-stand*, *Back-bear*, or *Bloody-hand*; for in these four a man is said to be taken with the manner, though three of them may be but presumptions. *Lex*

Martial-Law.

Lex Castrensis Anglicana, is that Law that dependeth upon the Kings Will and Pleasure, or his Lieutenant in time of actual War; for although in time of Peace the King for the more equal temper of Laws towards all his Subjects, makes no Laws but by the consent of the Three Estates in Parliament: yet in times of War, by reason of great dangers arising suddenly and unexpectedly upon small occasions, he useth absolute Power, insomuch as his word goeth for a Law. Martial Law extends onely to Soldiers and Mariners, and is not to be put in practice in times of Peace, but only in times of War, and then and there where the Kings Army is on foot.

Peculiar and By-Laws.

By the Kings Royal Charter granted to divers Cities of *England*, the Magistrates have a Power to make such Laws as may be beneficial for the Citizens, and not re-

repugnant to the Laws of the Land; and these are binding only to the Inhabitants of the place, unless such Laws are for a general good, or against a general inconvenience; for then they bind Strangers.

Religion.

Because Humane Laws can promote no other good, nor prevent any other evil but what is open to publick cognizance, it is very necessary for the Society of Mankind, and it is the great Wisdom of God so to ordain, That by Religion a Tribunal should be erected in every mans soul, to make him eschew evil and do good, when no Humane Law can take notice of either.

Of all Religions in the World, antiently only the Jews worshipt the true God in the true manner.

The Jews Religion in process of time by Traditions and Superstitions much corrupted, was partly abrogated, and the rest reformed, refined, and sublimated by our Saviour Christ, and since called the *Christian*

44 The present State

stian Religion; which was planted in England, *Tempore ut scimus* (saith *Gildas*) *summo Tiberii Caesaris*, which by computation will fall to be 5 years before *St. Peter* came to *Rome*, and about 5 years after the death of *Christ*.

It is also affirmed by Antient and Modern Grave Authors expressly, That in the 12th year of the Emperour *Nero*, *St. Peter* preached here, baptized many, and ordained Bishops, Priests, and Deacons: That immediately after *St. Stephen's* death and the Jews dispersion, *Joseph* of *Arimathea* with 12 others here preacht and died: That the first Fabrick of a Christian Church or Temple in all the World, was at *Glastenbury* in *Somerset-shire*, 31 years after *Christ's* death: And that *St. Paul* was permitted to preach here, before he was suffered so to do at *Rome*. Afterwards *Anno* 180. the Christian Faith was here first professed by publick Authority under King *Lucius* the first Christian King

of England.

King in the World; and with Christianity no doubt came in the Episcopal Government, as may be seen in the Catalogue of *British Bishops*, and it is certain that at the Council of *Arles Anno* 347. there were three *British Archbishops*, viz. of *London*, *York*, and *Caerleon*; whereof the first had for his Province under him the *South*, the second all the *North*, and the third all beyond *Severn*, or the *West* part of this Island. Under these three Archbishops there were reckoned about that Age 28 Bishops, all which did observe the Customs and Orders of the Greek or Eastern Churches, and particularly that of *Easter* different from the Custom of the Latine or Western Churches: nor did they acknowledge *Rome* to be the Mother Church of the *Britannick* Church. *Britain* was then a Patriarchal Jurisdiction in substance; though perhaps not in name, until about the year 596. When *Austin* the Monk assisted by the fraud of 40 other Monks, and

46 The present State

and by the Power of the then Hea- then *Anglo-Saxons* (who had long before driven the Britains into *Wales*) constrained the British Bi- shops to submit themselves to the Bishop of *Rome*; after which, by the Connivence or Concessions of the successive *Saxon* and *Norman* Kings, this Church was in some things subjected to the Bishop of *Rome* as its Patriarch or Primate; until *Henry* the Eighth by his Royal Authority (as he and all other Kings might remove their Chancellours or other Officers, and dispose of their Offices to others) did remove the Primacy or Metropolitanship from the See of *Rome* to the See of *Can- terbury*; as being far more agreea- ble to Civil Policy and Prudence; that such a high Power should be placed rather in a Subject of our own Nation than in a Sovereign Prince (for so is the Pope over se- veral Territories in *Italy*) and he far remote beyond the Seas: Which ejection of the Popes Authority was
not

of England.

47

not done, as in other Nations, by Popular Fury and Faction, but by the mature deliberate Counsel of Godly and Learned Divines assem- bled in Convocation, with the ex- press Authority of the King, and ratified by the Three States in Par- liament.

The minds of English Christians thus delivered from the Spiritual Ty- ranny, and the Dignity of English Kings from the Spiritual Slavery of *Rome*, the King and Clergy took this occasion to reform the many a- buses and errors crept into the Church in length of time by the great negligence and corruption of Governours; wherein the Wisdom of the English Reformers is to be admired to all Posterity: which was briefly thus:

First, Care was taken lest that (as it oft happens in indiscreet Pur- ges, and where ever the People only hath been the Reformer) the good should be taken away with the
bad:

bad: It was therefore resolved not to separate farther from the Church of *Rome* in Doctrine or Discipline than that Church had separated from what she was in her purest Times. For Doctrine they embraced that excellent Counsel of the Prophet, *State super vias antiquas & videte quanam sit via recta & ambulate in ea*; they made a stand and took a view of the purest Primitive Christian Times, and thence saw which was the right way, and followed that. For the Discipline of this Reformed Church they considered what it was in the purest Times of the first good Christian Emperours, for the Times of Persecution (before Temporal Princes embraced the Christian Faith) as they were most excellent Times for Doctrine and Manners; so very improper and unfit for a Pattern or example of outward Government and Policy.

The Doctrine of the Church of *England* is contained in the 39 Articles of the Book of Homilies.

The

The Worship and Discipline is seen in the Liturgy and Book of Canons, by all which it will appear to impartial forreign eyes, that the Church of *England* may warrantably be said to be the most exact and perfect Patern of all the Reformed Churches in the World: and whosoever shall be so happy as to be a true Son of that Church, must confess that it is the most incorrupt, humble, innocent, learned, the most Primitive, most Decent; and Regular Church in *Christendome*; that her Doctrine is built upon the Prophets and Apostles, according to the explication of the Antient Fathers; the Government truly Apostolical, and in all essential parts thereof of Divine Institution; the Liturgy an extract of the best Primitive Forms; the Ceremonies few but necessary, and such as tend only to Decency and increase of Piety: That shee holds the whole truly Catholick Foundation according to the Scripture and the Four first General

D

Coun-

Councils, that she adheres closely to Tradition truly Universal, that is, doth willingly receive *quod ab omnibus, quod ubique, quod semper receptum fuit*; which is the Old Rule of Catholicisme: so that none can say more truly with *Tertullian* than the English, *In ea regula incedimus quam Ecclesia ab Apostolis, Apostoli a Christo, Christus a Deo accepit*. Search all the the Religions in the World, none will be found more consonant to Gods Word for Doctrine, nor to the Primitive Examples for Government. None will be found that ascribes more to God, or that constitutes more firm Charity amongst Men; none will be found so excellent not only in the Community as Christian, but also in the special Notion as Reformed, for it keepeth the middle way between the Pomp of Superstitious Tyranny, and the meanness of Fanatick Anarchy.

In two Points the Church of *England* is truly Transcendent, First, It hath

hath the Grand Mark of the true Church, which most *European* Churches seem to want, and that is Charity towards other Churches; for it doth not so engross Heaven to its own Professors, as to damn all others to Hell. Secondly, It is the great glory of the English Protestant Church; that it never resisted Authority, nor engaged in Rebellion; a Praise that makes much to her advantage in the minds of all those who have read or heard of the dismal and devillish effects of the Holy League in *France*, by Papists, of the holy Coverant in *Scotland* by Puritans, and of the late Solemn League and Covenant in *England* by Presbyterians.

As for the Scandal begotten by the late Troubles and Murder of the late King, which some of the *Romish* endeavour to throw upon the English Religion; it is sufficiently known, that not one person that was a known Favourer and Practiser of that Religion by Law establishd in

The present State

England, was either a Beginner or active Prosecuter of that Rebellion, or any way an Abettor of that horrid Murther; for that our Religion neither gives such Rules, nor ever did set such Examples: nor indeed can that be truly said to be an Act either of the Parliament or People of *England*, but only of a few wretched Miscreants, Sons of *Belial*, that had not the feare of God before their eyes.

About the year 1635 or 1636 the Church of *England*, as well as the State, seemed to be in her full Stature of Glory; shining in Transcendent Empyrean Lustre and Purity of Evangelical Truth: Her Religious Performances, Her Holy Offices, ordered and regulated agreeably to the expedient of such Sacred Actions; Her Discipline-Model suitable to the Apostolick Form; the Set and Suit of Her Holy Tribe renowned for Piety and Learning; and all these in so Supereminent a Degree that no Church on this side the Apostolick

of England.

stolick can hardly or ever could compare with her in any one. And in this Felicity she might probably have continued, had she not been disturbed by a Generation of Hypocritical or at least blind Zealots; whose Predecessors in Queen *Elizabeth's* time began to oppose that excellent begun Reformation, and then to contrive the Alteration of Government; beginning first very low at Caps and Hoods, Surplices, and Episcopal Habits; but these flew higher, proceeding at length to the height of all Impiety; subverted even Liturgy, Episcopacy, and Monarchy it self: all which our Most Gracious King upon his Restauration hath most wisely and piouly restored, after the example of that good King *Hezekiah*, 2 *Chr.* 29. 2, 3. Since which we are able to render this joyful account of the Religion and Church of *England*, viz. That there is nothing wanting in order to Salvation: We have the Word of God, the Faith of the Apostles, the Creeds of the Primitive

54 The present State

tive Church, the Articles of the Four First General Councils, a Holy Liturgy, Excellent Prayers, Due Administration of the Sacraments, the Ten Commandments, the Sermons of Christ, and all the Precepts and Councils of the Gospel. We teach Faith and Repentance, and the Necessity of Good Works, and strictly exact the severity of a Holy Life. We live in Obedience to God, ready to part with all for his Sake; we honour His Most Holy Name; we worship Him at the mention of his Name; we confess his Attributes; we have Places, Times, Persons, and Revenues, consecrated and set apart for the Service and Worship of our Great God Creator of Heaven and Earth; we honour this Vicegerent the King, holding it damnable to use any other Weapons against him or his Army but Prayers and Tears: we hold a charitable respect toward all Christians: we confess our sins to God and to our Brethren, whom we

of England.

we have offended, and to Gods Ministers the Priests, in Cases of Scandal or of a troubled Conscience; and they duly absolve the Penitent Soul. We have an uninterrupted succession of Reverend, Learned, and Pious Bishops, who Ordain Priests and Deacons, Consecrate Churches, Confirm the Baptised at a due age, Bless the People, Intercede for them, Visit oft their respective Diocesses; taking Care of all the Churches, that they be served with as good and able Pastors as the small Maintenance can invite; they defend the Church Liberties, confer Institutions, inflict Ecclesiastical Censures, dispence in certain Cases, keep Hospitality, as St. Paul admonisheth, and Preach as oft as necessity requireth. *Hodie enim neque Concionatorum paucitas uti olim, neque Infidelium multitudo hoc exigere videtur.* For now neither that scarcity of Preachers as was amongst the Primitive Christians nor multitude of Heathens as dwelt among them, doth seem to require it very oft.

Ever since the beginning of our Reformation, there are some few Families in several parts of *England*, have persisted in the Romish Religion, and are usually called *Papists* from *Papa*, the old usual Name of the Bishop of *Rome*. Against these there are divers severe Laws still in force, but their number being not considerable, nor their Loyalty of later years questionable, those Laws are more rarely put in execution: besides the Clemency and gentle usage shewn them here, begets in *Romish* States and Potentates abroad the like gentle treatment of their Protestant Subjects, and of the English, living within their Dominions.

As for those other Perswasions whose Professors are commonly called *Presbyterians*, *Independents*, *Anabaptists*, *Quakers*, *Fifth-Monarchy-Men*, *Ranters*, *Adamites*, *Behmenists*, *Family of Love*, and the rest of those Mushromes of *Christianity*; as most of them sprang up sud-

suddenly in the late unhappy Night of Confusion, so it is to be presumed that they may in a short time vanish in this blessed Day of Order; and therefore not worthy to be described here as Religions professed in *England*: for as the State of *England* doth account them no other Members than the *Pudenda* of the Nation, and are ashamed of them, *Quippe ubi cetera Membra moventur ad arbitrium hominis, haec sola tam turbida, inordinata ac effrenata sunt ut praeter & contra voluntatem commoveri solent;* so neither doth the Church of *England* look upon those Professors as Sons but Bastards: or make account of any other interest in them than a man makes of those Vermin which breed out of his excrementitious sweat, or those *Ascariides* which come sometimes in his most uncleanly parts. Touching the *Jews* &c.

As some years before the late ^{Their} Troubles, no people of any King-^{Manners} dom.

58 The present State

dom in the World enjoyed more freedom from *Slavery* and *Taxes*, so generally none were freer from evil tempers and humors: none more devoutly religious, willingly obedient to the *Laws*, truly loyal to the *King*, lovingly hospitable to *Neighbours*, ambitiously civil to *Strangers*, or more liberally charitable to the *Needy*.

No Kingdom could shew a more valiant prudent *Nobility*, a more learned and pious *Clergy*, or a more contented loyal *Commonalty*.

The *Men* were generally honest, the *Wives* and *Women* chaste and modest, *Parents* loving, *Children* obedient, *Husbands* kind, *Masters* gentle, and *Servants* faithful.

In a word, the *English* were then according to their *Native Tempers*, the best *Neighbours*, best *Friends*, best *Subjects*; and the best *Christians* in the World.

Amongst these excellent *Tempers*, amongst this goodly *Wheat*, whilst men slept, the *Enemy* came and sowed

of England. 59

sowed *Tares*, there sprang up of latter years a sort of People *slow*, *sullen*, *suspicious*, *querulous*, *peevish*, *envious*, *reserved*, *narrow-hearted*, *close-fisted*, *self-conceited*, *ignorant*, *stiff-necked*, *Children of Belial* (according to the genuine signification of the word) ever prone to *despise Dominion*, to *speak evil of Dignities*, to *gain-say Order, Rule, and Authority*; who have accounted it their honour to contend with *Kings* and *Governors*, and to *disquiet the Peace of Kingdoms*; whom no *deserts*, no *clemency* could ever oblige, neither *Oaths* or *Promises* bind, breathing nothing but *sedition* and *calumnies* against the *Establisht Government*, *aspiring* without measure, *railing* without reason; and making their own *wild fancies* the *Square* and *Rule of their Consciences*; hating, *despising*, or *disrespecting* the *Nobility*, *Gentry*, and *Superiour Clergy*, &c.

These lurking in all quarters of *England*, had at length with their

60 The present State

pestilential breath infected some of the *worse natured* and *worse nurtured* Gentry, divers of the *inferiour Clergy*, most of the *Tradesmen*, and very many of the *Peasantry*, and prevailed so far, as not only to spoil the best governed State, and ruin the purest and most flourishing Church in *Christendome*, but also to corrupt the *minds*, the *humors*, and very *natures* of so many English; that notwithstanding the late happy Restauration of the *King* and *Bishops*, the incessant joynt endeavours and studies of all our Governours to reduce this people to their *pristine* happiness, yet no man now living can reasonably hope to see in his time the like blessed dayes again; without a transplantation of all those Sons of *Belial* (as King *James* in his grave Testament to his Son did intimate) without an utter extirpation of those Tares, which yet the Clemency and meekness of the Protestant Religion seems to forbid.

The

of England.

61

The *Nobility* and chief *Gentry* of *England* have been even by Strangers compared to the *finest Floure*, but the lower sort of common People to the *coursest bran*; the innate good nature, joyned with the liberal education and converse with Strangers in forreign Countries, render those exceeding civil; whereas the wealth, insolence, and pride of these, and the rare converse with Strangers, have rendred them so distasteful, not only to the few Strangers who frequent *England*, but even to their own Gentry, that they could sometimes wish that either the Country were less plentiful, or that the Impositions were heavier; for by reason of the great abundance of *Flesh* and *Fish*, *Corn*, *Leather*, *wooll*, &c. which the Soil of its own bounty with little labour doth produce, the *Yeomanry* at their ease and almost forgetting labour, grow rich, and thereby so proud, insolent, and careless, that they neither give that humble respect

spect and awful reverence which in other Kingdoms is usually given to Nobility; Gentry, and Clergy, nor are they so industrious or so skilful in Manufactures as some of our Neighbour Nations; so that in England it is no Paradox to affirm, that as too much indigency in the inferior sort of people doth depress the spirits and dull the minds of them, so too plentiful and wanton a fortune, causeth in them a laziness and less industry, that State commonly enjoying most peace and order and happiness, where either the moderate barrenness of the Countrey, or want of ground, or multitude of Imposts (as in Holland) do necessitate the common people to be industrious in their Callings, and so to mind their own, as not to disturb the State and Church affairs.

Moreover, of the English especially it hath been formerly and unhappily observed, that then it is happiest with them, when they are somewhat pressed, and in a complaining

ing condition; according to that old Riming Verse,

Anglica gens est optima flens & pessima ridens.

The English Common people anciently were, and at this day are very apt to hearken to Prophecies, and to create Prodigies; and then interpret them according to their own extravagant conceits: to invent and then maintain any the most prodigious Opinions and Tenets in Divinity: some of the inferior sort of late holding abominable opinions, unworthy even of men and such as in no Age were ever broacht before.

The English National vices were anciently Gluttony and the effects therof Lasciviousness, (when they made four Meals in a day and most excessive Feasting, with great plenty of French Wine) when Women of professed incontinency were permitted to proffer their Bodies to all Comers, in certain places called
Stews

Stews or Stoves, or Bathing places; because men were wont to bath themselves there (as still in other Countreyes) before they adrest themselves to venerous acts. Moreover Pride in Apparel, wherein they were antiently so extravagant and foolish, so superfluous and obscene, that divers Statutes before our Reformation in Religion, and Homilies since, have been made against that Excess, and an English Man was wont to be pictured naked with a pair of Taylors Sheers in his hand, and a piece of Cloth under his arme, with Verses annex, intimating, that he knew not what fashion of Clothes to have.

Excess of drinking was anciently more rare in England, as appears by an old Poet.

*Ecce Britannorum mos est laudabilis iste;
Ut bibat arbitrio pocula quisque suo.*

*The Danes in the time of King Edgar first brought it in, but it was afterward banisht hence, so that we find no ancient Statute since
the*

the Conquest against it; for though the Statutes heretofore made against Excess in Apparel and Dyet are ancient, yet those against Drunkenness are but of late date.

*As the English returning from the Wars in the Holy Land, brought home the foul disease of Leprosie, now almost extinct here, though not yet in our neighbouring Countries: so in our Fathers days the English returning from the service in the Neatherlands, brought with them the foul Vice of Drunkenness, as besides other Testimonies the Term of Carous, from Gar anz, All out, learnt of the High Dutch there in the same service; so Quasse, &c. This Vice of late was more, though at present so much, that some persons, and those of quality may not safely be visited in an afternoon, without running the hazard of excessive drinking of Healths (whereby in a short time twice as much liquor is consumed as by the Dutch, who sip and prate) and in some places it
is*

is esteemed a piece of wit to make a man drunk; for which purpose some *swilling insipid Trencher-Buffoon* is alwayes at hand.

However it may be truly affirmed that at present there is generally less Excess in *Drinking* (especialy about *London*, since the use of *Coffee*) less excess in *Dyet*, but principally in *Apparrel* than heretofore; insomuch that the poor Tradesman is much pincht thereby; for as it is expedient for the benefit of the whole Common-wealth, that divers *unnecessary* and *superfluous* Commodities should be allowed; as *Tobacco, Coffee, Spices, Sugars, Raisins, Silks, Fine Linnen, &c.* so some less hurtful excesses (as in *Apparrel, Diet Building, Coaches, Lacqueys, &c.*) must either be connived at, or much of all the money of the Nation must lie dead and unemployed (as it now doth in the *private, sullen, niggardly Non-Conformists* hand) and Tradesmen must either starve or be sustained by Almes.

The

The Sin of *Buggery* brought into *England* by the *Lombards*; as appears not onely by the word *Bugeria*, but also by *Rot. Parl. 50. Ed. 3, N. 58.* is now rarely practised amongst *English*, although sometimes discovered amongst *Aliens* in *England*, and then punished by Death without any remission.

Imposonments, so ordinary in *Italy*, are so abominable amongst *English*, as 21 *H. 8.* it was made High Treason, though since repealed; after which the punishment for it was to be put alive in a Caldron of Water, and their boyled to death: at present it is Felony without benefit of Clergy.

Stabbing in *England* is much more seldome than in *Italy*, the *English* being easie to be reconciled, to pardon and remit offences, not apt to seek revenge; the true well-bred *English* have more of inclination to goodness, which the Greek called *Philanthropia*, than other Nations: the Nobility and well-bred Gentry delighting

delighting to be gracious and courteous to strangers, compassionate to the afflicted, and grateful to Benefactors, when their Purse or Estate not diverted by other extravagant expences, will give them leave to remember them.

The English according to the *Climate*, are of a *middle temper*. The *Nothern Saturnine*, and the *Southern Mercurial temper* meeting in their Constitutions, render them *ingenious and active*, yet *solid and persevering*, which nourish under a *substantial liberty*, inspires a *courage generous and lasting*.

Their *Ingeniety* will not allow them to be excellent at the *Cheat*, but subject in that point rather to take than give, and supposing others as open-hearted as themselves, are many times in Treaties overmatcht by them, whom they overmatcht in *Arms and true Valour*: which hath been very eminent in all ages, and almost in all Lands and Seas too of the whole world.

The

The *English* since the Reformation are so much given to Literature, that all sorts are generally the most knowing people in the World. They have been so much addicted to writing, and especially in their own Language, and with so much licence or connivence, that according to the observation of a Learned Man, there have been during our late Troubles and Confusions *more good and more bad Books* printed and published in the English Tongue, than in all the vulgar Languages of Europe.

For solidity of Matter, for elegance of Style in their *Sermons, Comedies, Romances*, as also in their Books of *Philosophy, Physick, History*, and all other solid Learning, no Nation hath surpassed the English, and few equalled them.

The English, especially the *Gentry*, are so much given to *Prodigality and Slothfulness*, that Estates are oftner *spent and sold* than in any other Countrey: They think it a
piece

The present State

piece of frugality beneath a Gentleman to bargain before-hand, or to count afterward, for what they eat in any place, though the rate be most unreasonable; whereby it comes to pass, that Cooks, Vintners, Innkeepers, and such mean fellows enrich themselves, and begger and insult over the Gentry. In a word, by their prodigality it comes to pass, that not only those, but Taylors, Dancing-Masters, and such Trifling Fellows, arrive to that riches and pride as to ride in their Coaches, keep their Summer-Houses, to be served in Plate, &c. an insolence insupportable in other well-governed Nations.

Punishments of Criminals.

Because the several punishments inflicted for several Crimes are different in most Countreyes, and those of England much different from those of all other Countreys; a brief account of them may probably not be unacceptable to Forreigners especially.

All

of England.

All Crimes in England that touch the life of a Man, are either High-Treason, Petit-Treason, or Felony. Although some High-Treasons are much more heinous and odious than others; yet the punishment by Law is the same for all sorts (except for Coyning of Money) and that is that the Traitor laid upon a Hurdle or Sledge be drawn to the Gallows, there hanged by the Neck, presently cut down alive, his entrails to be suddenly pulled out of his Belly and burnt before the face of the Criminal, than his Head to be cut off, his Body to be divided into 4 parts; and lastly, that the Head and Body be hung up or impaled where the King shall command.

Besides all this, he shall forfeit all his Lands and Goods whatsoever, his Wife shall lose her Dower, his Children their Nobility, and all their Right of Inheriting him or any other Ancestor: Our Law thinking it most reasonable, that he who endeavoured to destroy the King, the Breath

Breath of our Nostrils, and thereby to rend the Majesty of Government; his Body, Lands, Goods, and Posterity, should be rent torn and destroyed. For Coining of Money, though adjudged *High-Treason*, the Punishment having been onely drawing and hanging before the Statute of 25 *Ed.* 3. it remains so still.

Petit-Treason is either when a Servant killeth his Master or Mistris, or a Wife killeth her Husband, or a Clergy-man his Prelate, to whom he oweth obedience; and for this Crime the Punishment is to be drawn (as before) and to be hanged by the Neck till he be dead. The punishment for a Woman convicted of *High-Treason* or *Petit-Treason*, is all one; and that is to be drawn and burnt alive.

Felonies are all other Capital Crimes, for which antiently there were several sorts of Punishments till *H. 1.* ordained that the Punishments for all Felonies should be to be hanged by the Neck till they are dead. But

But if a Peer of the Realm commit *High-Treason*, *Petit-Treason*, or *Felony*, although his Judgement be the same with that of common persons; yet the King doth usually extend so much favour to such, as to cause them onely to be beheaded with an Axe upon a Block lying on the ground, and not as in all other Countreys by a Sword kneeling or standing.

If a Criminal indicted of *Petit-Treason* or *Felony*, refuseth to answer, or to put himself upon a Legal Trial; then for such standing Mute, and Contumacy, he is presently to undergo that horrible punishment called *Paine forte & dure*; that is to be sent back to the Prison from whence he came, and there laid in some low dark Room naked upon the bare ground on his back, his Arms and Legs drawn with Cords fastned to the several quarters of the room; then shall be laid upon his Body Iron and Stone, so much as he may bear or more: the
E next

74 The present State

next day he shall have three Morfels of Barly Bread without Drink; and the third day shall have Drink of the Water next to the Prison Door, except it be running Water, without Bread; and this shall be his Diet till he die. Which grievous kind of death some stout Fellows have sometimes chosen, that so being not tried and convicted of their Crimes, their Estates may not be forfeited to the King, but descend to their Children; nor their Bloud stained.

But, in Case of *High-Treason*, though the Criminal stand mute, yet Judgment shall be given against him as if he had been convicted, and his Estate confiscated.

After Beheading or Hanging, the Criminals friends usually interr the Body decently where they please; onely if the Crime be very enormous, as for Murdering and Robbing any Person; then by Order, is the Criminal usually hanged by the neck till he be dead, and afterwards

of England.

wards hanged in Chains till the Body rot; and in some Cases his Right Hand is first cut off and then hanged.

In all such *Felonies* where the Benefit of *Clergy* is allowed (as it is in many) there the Criminal is to be markt with a hot Iron with a *T.* or an *M.* for *Thief* or *Manslayer* on the Left Hand, and Wandring Rogues are to be burnt on the Shoulder with an *R.*

Antiently in the time of the Saxon Christian Kings, and sometime after the coming of the Norman Kings, men were rarely put to death for any Crime, but either paid grievous Fines, or for the more enormous Crimes, to loose their Eyes or their Testicles; and so remain living Monuments of their Impieties, as Punishments far worse than death; which amongst Christians is believed to be but a passage from this life to a far better, and so more a Reward than a Punishment.

For *Petit Larceny* or *Smal Theft*,
E 2 that

that is of the value of 12. d. or under, the punishment antiently was sometimes by loss of an Ear, sometimes by Cudgeling, but since *Edw. 3.* onely by Whipping; but if such *Petit Thief* be found by the Jury to have fled for the same, he forfeiteth all his Goods.

Perjury, by bearing false witness upon Oath, is punished with the Pillory called *Collistrigium*, burnt in the Fore-head with a *P.* his Trees growing upon his Ground to be rooted up, and his Goods confiscated.

Forgery, Cheating, Libelling, False Weights and Measures, Fore-stalling the Market, Offences in Baking and Brewing, are commonly punished with standing in the Pillory, and sometimes to have one or both Ears nailed to the Pillory, and cut off, or there bored through the Tongue with a hot Iron.

The Punishment for *Misprision of High-Treason*, that is for neglecting or concealing it, is forfeiture of the Profits

Profits of his Lands during life, and of all Goods, and also Imprisonment for life.

For *Striking in the Kings Court*, whereby Blood is drawn, the Punishment is, that the Criminal shall have his Right Hand stricken off in a most sad and solemn manner; as more at large may be seen in the Chapter of the Kings Court.

For striking in *Westminster-Hall* whilst the Courts of Justice are sitting, is Imprisonment during life, and forfeiture of all his Estate.

For one found in a *Præmunire*, is forfeiture of all his Estate, to be put out of the Kings Protection, and Imprisonment during the Kings Pleasure.

The Punishment of *Petit Jurors* attainted of giving a Verdict contrary to Evidence wittingly is severe and terrible; they are condemned to lose the Franchise or Freedom of the Law, that is, become infamous and of no credit, incapable of being a Witness or of a Jury, their Houses,

E 3 Lands,

78 The present State

Lands, and Goods shall be seised into the Kings hands, their Houses pulled down, their Meadows ploughed up, their Trees rooted up, all their Lands layd waste, and their Bodies imprisoned.

The like Punishment is also for those who shall conspire to indict an Innocent falsely and maliciously of *Felony*.

Any Man or Woman convicted, in the Bishops Court of *Heretic*, is to be delivered over to the Secular Power, and to be burnt alive.

Felo de se, that is one who wittingly killeth himself; is to be buried out of *Christian* Burial with a Stake driven thorow the Corps, and to forfeit his Goods.

Drunkards, Vagabonds, &c. are punished by setting their Legs in the Stocks for certain hours.

Scolding Women are to be placed in a *Trebuchet*, commonly called a *Cucking-stool*, placed over some deep water, into which they are let down

of England.

79

down and plunged under water thrice, to cool their choler and heat.

Other Misdemeanors are commonly punished with Imprisonments or Fines, and sometimes with both.

As for breaking on the Wheel and other like; Torturing Punishments, common in other Christian Countries, the English look upon them as too cruel for Christian Professors to use.

As for putting any to the Rack, (unless perhaps in some Cases of *High-Treason*) it is by the English believed to favour of too much slavishness; besides they contemning and despising death, and yet not enduring Torture, will sooner acknowledge themselves guilty of any the foulest Crime whatsoever, then be put to the Rack; and the People not accustomed to such cruelty, would be apt to pity the party tortured, and abominate the Sovereign and his Judges, for introducing such

80 The present State

a Custom; and the Jury would easily quit the Prisoner of whatever Confession should be thus extorted.

Number of Inhabitants.

England contains 9725 Parishes, now allowing to each Parish one with another 80 Families, there will be 778000 Families, and to each Family 7 persons, there will be found in all Five Millions four hundred forty six thousand souls, and amongst them about one Million of Fighting Men.

Their Language

The English Tongue being at present much refined, exceedingly copious, expressive, and significant, (by reason of a liberty taken by the Natives of borrowing out of all other Languages, what ever might conduce thereunto) is (as their blood) a mixture chiefly of the Old Saxon (a Dialect of the Teutonick) and the Old Norman (a Dialect of the French) not without some favour of

of England.

of the Britains, Romans and Danes Languages.

The Romans possessing England, caused their Tongue, the Latine once, to be generally used in this Countrey.

The Saxons succeeding, introduced their Language wheresoever they seated themselves.

The Normans afterwards getting possession of England, caused the Norman or French Tongue to be learnt at School by the Saxons, and for a long time had all Laws, Pleadings, Sermons, &c. in French.

The Latine Tongue at present is made use of in Court Rolls, Records, Processes of Courts, in Charters, Commissions, Patents, Writs, Bonds, &c.

The Names of all Shires, Cities, Towns, and Villages, Places, and Men, in England, are generally Saxons, and so are most Nouns Appellative, and a great part of the Verbs.

In French, or rather Norman, are still written the Common Laws,

E s and

82 The present State

and learnt by young Students there- of. Also some *Pleadings*, and all *Moors* and *Law Exercises*, are wholly *French*. In *Parliaments* the King doth in *French* signifie his Assent or dissent to all Bills.

Stature. The *Natives* of *England* (by reason of the *Temperate Climate*, *Middle Air*, not rendred unequal by high *Mountains*, and unhealthy by many *Marshes*. plenty of wholesome food, and the use of Beer rather than *Wine*) *Pour la belle taille & le Beau teint au visage*, as the *French* say, For a just handsome large proportion of body, for clear complexions and pleasing features, do surpass all the Nations of the World.

Eyet. The *English* are generally great *Flesh-eaters*, although by the nearness of the *Sea* and abundance of *Rivers* and *Fish-ponds*, there is no want of *Fish*. In former times their Table was in many places covered

of England.

vered four times a day; they had *Break-fasts*, *Dinners*, *Beverages*, and *Suppers*, and every where set *Dinners* and *Suppers* untill in the late troubles: wherein many eminent Families were much impoverisht; a Custom was taken up by some of the Nobility and Gentry, of eating a more plentiful *Dinner*, but little or no *Supper*; as on the contrary the *Romans* and *Jews* anciently, and the hotter *Climats* at this day have little or no *Dinners*, but set *Suppers*.

The *English* are not now so much addicted to *Gluttony* and *Drunkenness* as of late years, but unto *Tobacco* more.

Feasting also is not now so common and profuse as antiently, for although the *Feasts* at *Coronations*, at the *Installation* of *Knights* of the *Garter*, *Consecration* of *Bishops*, *Entertainments* of *Ambassadors*, the *Feasts* of the *Lord Mayor* of *London*, the *Sergeants* at *Law*, and *Readers Feasts* in the *Innes* of Court,

Court, are all very sumptuous and magnificent in these times; yet compared to the Feasts of our *Ancestors*, seem to be but niggardly and sparing: for *Richard Earl of Cornwall*, Brother to *Henry 3.* had at his Marriage Feast, as is recorded; Thirty thousand Dishes of Meat; and King *Richard the Second* at a *Christmas* spent daily 26 Oxen, 300 Sheep, besides Fowl and all other Provision proportionably: So antiently at a *Call of Sergeants*, each *Sergeant* (saith *Fortescue*) spent sixteen hundred Crowns, which in those dayes was more than 1600 *l.* now.

The English that feed not over liberally (whereto the great plenty and variety of Viands entice them) nor drink much *wine*, but content themselves with Small *Ale* or *Sider*, (but especially the later) are observed to be much more *healthy* and far longer lived than any of our Neighbour Nations.

For

For *Apparrel* or *Clothing*, the *French Mode* hath been generally used in *England* of late years. In the time of *Queen Elizabeth* sometimes the *High Dutch*, sometimes the *Spanish*, and sometimes the *Turkish* and *Morisco Habits*, were by the *English* worn in *England* when the Women wore *Doublets* with *Pendant Codpieces* on the Breast, full of *Tags* and *Cuts*; moreover *Gallygascons*, *Fardingales*, and *Stockings* of divers Colours: but since the *Restoration* of the King now rainging, *England* never saw, for matter of wearing *Apparrel*, less prodigality, and more modesty in Clothes, more plainness and comeliness than amongst her Nobility, Gentry, and Superiour Clergy; onely the Citizens, the Countrey people, and the Servants, appear clothed for the most part above and beyond their Qualities, Estates, or Conditions. Since our last breach with *France*, the English Men (though not the Women) have

have quitted the French Mode, and taken a grave Wear, much according with the Oriental Nations.

Recreations.

For Variety of *Divertisements*, *Sports* and *Recreations*, no Nation doth Excel the English.

The King hath abroad his *Forests*, *Chases*, and *Parks*, full of variety of Game; for Hunting *Red* and *Fallow Deer*, *Foxes*, *Otters*, *Hakwing*, his *Paddock Courses*, *Horse Races*, &c. and at home, *Tennis*, *Baloon*, *Billiards*, *Enterludes*, *Balls*, *Masks*, &c. The Nobility and Chief Gentry have their *Parks*, *Warrens*, *Decoys*, *Paddock Courses*, *Horse-Races*, *Hunting*, *Coursing*, *Fishing*, *Fowling*, *Hawking*, *Setting-dogs*, *Tumblers*, *Lurchers*, *Duck-hunting*, *Cockfighting*, *Guns for Birding*, *Low-Bells*, *Bat-fowling*, *Angling*, *Nets*, *Tennis*, *Bowling*, *Billiards*, *Tables*, *Chess*, *Draughts*, *Cards*, *Dice*, *Catches*, *Questions*, *Purposes*, *Stage-Plays*, *Masks*, *Balls*, *Dancing*, *Singing*, all sorts of *Musical*

sical Instruments, &c. The Citizens and Peasants have *Hand-Ball*, *Foot-Ball*, *Skittles*, or *Nine-Pins*, *Shovel-board*, *Stow-Ball*, *Goffe*, *Trol-Madam*, *Cudgels*, *Bear-Baiting*, *Bull-baiting*, *Bow* and *Arrow*, *Throwing at Cocks*, *Shuttlecock*, *Bowling*, *Quaits*, *Leaping*, *Wrestling*, *Pitching the Bar*, and *Ring-ing of Bells*, a Recreation used in no other Countrey of the World.

Amongst these *Cock-Fighting* seems to all Forreigners too *childish* and *unsuitable* for the *Gentry*, and for the *Common People*, *Bull-baiting*, and *Bear-baiting* seem too *cruel*, and for the *Citizens*, *Foot-Ball*, and *throwing at Cocks*, very *uncivil*, *rude* and *barbarous*, within the *City*.

Nomina quasi Notamina, Names *English* were first imposed upon Men for *distinction* sake by the *Jews* at their *Circumcision*. by the *Romans* at the *9th day after Birth*, and by the *Christians* at the *Baptisme*; of such *signi-*

signification for the most part that might denote the future good hope or good wishes of Parents toward their Children.

The English Names of *Baptisme* are generally either *Saxon*, as *Robert*, *Richard*, *Henry*, *William*, *Edward*, *Edmund*, *Edwin*, *Gilbert*, *Walter*, *Leonard*, &c. which are all very significative; or else out of the *Old* and *New Testament*, as *Abraham*, *Isaack*, *Jacob*, *John*, *Thomas*, *James* &c. Or sometimes the Mothers Surname, and rarely two Christian Names, which yet is usual in other Countreys, especially in *Germany*.

Surnames Names super-added to the Christian Names the French call *Surnoms* (*i. e.*) *supernomina*.

The *Hebrews*, *Greeks*, and most other ancient Nations, had no *Surnames* fixt to their Families as in these days, but counted thus, for example among the *Hebrews*, *Melchi Ben Addi*, *Addi Ben Casam*, &c. So the *Britains*, *Hugh ap Owen*,
Owen

Owen ap Rhese, so the *Irish* *Neal mac Con*, *Con mac Dermoti*, &c.

As Christian Names were first given for distinction of Persons, so Surnames for distinction of Families.

About *Anno* 1000 the *French* Nation began to take Surnames with *de* prefixt of a place, and *le* prefixt for some other qualification; as at this day is their usual manner. The English also took to themselves Surnames; but not generally by the Common People, till the Raign of *Edw. I.*

Great Offices of Honour have brought divers Surnames, as *Edward Fitz-Theobald* being long ago made *Butler of Ireland*, the Duke of *Ormond* and his Ancestors descended from him, took the Surname of *Butler*; so *John Count Tanquer-vile* of *Normandy* being made Chamberlain to the King of *England* above 400 years ago, his Descendants of *Sherborn Castle* in *Oxford*.

ford-shire, and of *Prestbury* in *Glocester-shire*, bear still the same Coat of Arms by the Name of *Chamberlain*.

At first, for Surnames the English Gentry took the Name of their Birth-place or Habitation, as *Thomas of Aston* or *East Town*, *John of Sutton* or *South-Town*; and as altered their Habitation, so they altered their Surname. After, when they became Lords of places, they called themselves *Thomas Aston* of *Aston*, *John Sutton* of *Sutton*.

The Common People for Surnames added their Fathers Name with *Son* at the end thereof, as *Thomas Johnson*, *Robert Richardson*. They also oft took their Fathers Nick-name or Abbreviation, with addition of *s*; as *Gibs* the Nick name or Abbreviation, of *Gilbert*, *Hobs* of *Robert*, *Nicks* of *Nicholas*, *Bates* of *Bartholomew*, *Sams* of *Sammel*, *Hodges* of *Roger*; and thence also *Gibson*, *Hobson*, *Nickson*, *Batson*, *Samson*, *Hodson*, and *Hutchinson*,

chinson, &c. Many also were furnished from their Trade, as *Smith*, *Joyner*, *Weaver*, *Walker*, that is *Futler* in Old English; and *Goff*, that is *Smith* in Welsh, &c. Or from their Offices, as *Porter*, *Steward*, *Shepherd*, *Carter*, *Spencer*, that is *Steward*, *Cook*, *Butler*; *Kemp*, that is in Old English *Soldier*: Or from their place of Abode, as *Underwood*, *Underhil*, also *Atwood*, *Atwell*, *Athill*; which three last are shrunk into *Wood*, *Wells*, *Hills*: Or from their Colour or Complexion, as *Fairfax*, that is *Fair locks*; *Pigot*, that is *Speckled*; *Blunt* or *Blund*, that is *Flaxen Hair*; so from Birds, as *Arundel*, that is *Swallow*; *Corbet*, that is *Raven*: *Wren*, *Finch*, *Woodcock*, &c. so from Beasts, as *Lamb*, *Fox*, *Moyle*, that is *Mule*.

The Normans at their first coming into *England* brought Surnames for many of their Gentry with *de* prefixt, as the French Gentry doth generally at this day, and their Christian

stian names were generally German; they being originally descended from Norway inhabited by Germans. And some for about 200. years after the Conquest, took for Surnames their Fathers Christian Name, with Fitz or Fils prefixt as Robert Fitz-William, Henry Fitz Gerard, &c.

The Britains or Welsh more lately civilized, did not take Surnames till of late years, and that for the most part onely, by leaving out a in ap, and annexing the p to their Fathers Christian Name; as instead of Evan ap Rice, now Evan Price; so instead of ap Howel, Powel; ap Hughe, Pughe, ap Rogers, progers &c.

The most ancient Families and of best account for Surnames in England, are either those that are taken from Places in Normandy and thereabouts in France, and from some other Transmarine Countreys, or else from Places in England and Scotland; as de Eureux, Chamworth, Seymour, Nevile, Montague, Mohun,

hun, Biron, Bruges, Clifford, Berkeley, Arcy, Stourton, Morley, Courtney, Grandison, Hastings, &c. which antiently had all de prefixt, but of later times generally neglected or made one word as Devereux, Darcy &c.

In England at the beginning of Christianity they counted as all other Christians, according to the then Roman Account by Olympiads or space of five years. Afterwards (in the Raign of Constantine the first Christian Emperour) by Inditions or Fifteen years; at length in the Raign of the Emperour Justinian, 532 years after Christs Incarnation (and not before) all Christians generally began to count ab Anno Christi Incarnati; at which time one Dionysius Exiguus or Abbas, a worthy Roman, had finisht a Cycle for the Observation of Easter, which was then generally received, and is still observed by the Church of England; the ground whereof

Englifo Computation.

94 The present State

whereof is this. The *Vernal Equinox* at that time was accounted to be the 21 of *March*, and by consequence must be the earliest *Full Moon*, and then *March* the 8 must be the earliest *New Moon*; and *April* the 18 the latest *Full Moon*; which happening on a *Sunday* (as it will when the *Dominical Letter* is *C.* and the *Golden Number* 8) then *Easter* that year will be *April* 25. So when the *New Moon* shall be on *March* 2. (as it will when the *Dominical Letter* is *D.* and the *Golden Number* 16) then *Easter* will be on the 22 *March*, as was in the year 1668.

But the *Romish Church* inventing new Rules for finding of *Easter*, it happens sometimes that their *Easter* is full 5 weeks before ours, and sometimes with ours, but never after ours; for *Pope Gregory* the 13th in the year 1582, having observed that upon exact account the year contained above 365 days, not full 6 hours (as had been from the time

of England.

95

time of *Julius Caesar* hitherto reckoned) but only 5 hours 49 minutes and 16 seconds, and that this difference of almost 11 minutes in the space of about 134 years, maketh one whole day, which not considered since the Regulation of *Easter*, had brought back the year at least 10 days; insomuch that the *Vernal Equinox* which was at first on the 21 of *March*, was now on the 11th of *March*; by reason whereof sometimes 2 *Full Moons* past between the *Equinox* and *Easter*, contrary to the *Primitive Institution* thereof, which was, that *Easter* should always be observed on the *Sunday* following the first *Full Moon* after the *Vernal Equinox*, *Pope Gregory* then having observed these inconveniences, resolved at once to take away 10 days, and that out of the *Moneth* of *October*, by calling the 5th day thereof the 15th and that for that year those *Festivals* which fell in those 10 days, which by reason of the *Vintage* time were
but

but few, should be celebrated upon the 15, 16, and 17th days of that Moneth. And that the *Equinox* might never *retrocede* for the future, it was then provided that every 400 years 3 *Bissextile years* should be left out, that is, in the years 1700, 1800, and 1900, and so again in 2100, 2200, and 2300, leaving the year 200 to have its *Bissextile*, and so every 400th year.

The English Nation, as all other States that withdrew themselves from under the Bishop of Rome's usurped Authority, before the said year 1582, except *Holland* and *Zealand*, observe still the antient Account made by *Julius Caesar* 43 years before the Birth of Christ; and is therefore called the *Old Style* or *Julian Account*: the other observed by those still under the *Romish Yoke*, is called the *New Style* or *Gregorian Account*; and is (by reason of the aforesaid 10 days taken away) 10 days before ours for the begin-

beginning of Moneths, and for all Fixt Festivals; but various for all Moveable Festivals.

Easter and the other *Moveable Feasts* in *England*, are most certainly thus found. *Shrove-Tuesday* is always the first *Tuesday* after the first *New Moon* after *January*, except that *New Moon* happen on a *Tuesday*, then the next is *Shrove-Tuesday*, and the Sunday following is *Quadragesima*, and the Sixth Sunday after is *Easter Day*, and the Fifth Sunday after *Easter* is *Rogation Sunday*, and the Thursday following, being 40 days after the Resurrection, is *Ascension day*; 10 days after which, or 50 days after *Easter* is *Pentecost* or *Whitsunday*, and the Sunday following is *Trinity Sunday*: which Computation of the Church of *England* agrees with all the Eastern Christian Churches, for they and we find *Easter* by the Rules which were generally received by all *Christendom*, *Anno* 532, and ever since, till 1582, it was alter-

98 The present State

ed by the Pope, as aforesaid, yet cannot it be denied but that this old Computation is become erroneous; for by our Rules, two *Easters* will be observed in one year, as in the year 1667, and not one *Easter* to be observed this following year; as this Author observed formerly in his Proposals to the Parliament.

Advent Sunday hath a peculiar Rule, and is always the Fourth *Sunday* before *Christmasts Day*, or the nearest *Sunday* to *St. Andrews*, whether before or after.

The year in *England* according to the *Cycles* of the *Sun* and *Moon*, and according to *Almanacks*, begins on the First of *January*; but the *English Church* and *State* begins the year from the day of *Christs Incarnation*; viz. on the 25th of *March*, which also is observed in *Spain*; yet the *Portugues* (as divers *Countries* in *Africa*) begin their year on the 29th of *August*, the *Venetians* on the first of *March* according to the *Epact*, the *Gracians* on the longest day,

of England.

day, as the old *Romans* did on the shortest day; which two last seem to have most reason; as beginning just at the *Periodical* day of the *Suns* return.

The *Natural* day consisting of 24 hours, is begun in *England* at *Midnight*, and counted by 12 hours to *Midday*, and again by 12 hours to next *Midnight*; whereas in *Italy*, *Bohemia*, *Poland*, and some other *Countries*, their account is from *Sun-setting* by 24 of the clock to the next *Sun-setting*, and at *Norremberg* and *Wirtemberg* in *Germany*, according to the old *Babylonian* Account they begin at the first hour after *Sun-rising*, to count one of the *Clock*, and so again at the first hour after *Sun-set*.

Probably there was a time when *English* those Names of *Number* now in use *Num-* amongst all civilized *Nations* were *bring-* unknown, and men applied their *Fingers* of one or both *Hands* to things they desired to keep account

100 The present State

of, and thence it may be that the Numeral words are but Ten in any Nation, and in some Nations but Five; and then they begin again, as after decem, undecim, duodecim, &c.

The Hebrews and the Greeks instead of Numeral Words used the Letters of their Alphabets, beginning again after the Tenth Letter.

The Latines made use onely of 7 of their Capital Alphabet, viz.



MDCLXVI; all comprehended in this Figure, and all made use of in the same order, in the late

year 1666, which never did happen before, nor ever will happen again.

The English (as all the Western Christian World till about 400 years ago) used only Numeral Words in all Writings; but since use the Figures 1, 2, 3, &c. which the Christians learnt first of the Maures or Arabs, and they of the Indians.

CHAP.

of England.

CHAP. III.

Of the Government of ENGLAND in general.

OF Governments there can be but three Kinds, for either One, or More, or All, must have the Sovereign Power of a Nation. If One, then it is a Monarchy; If More (that is, an Assembly of Choice Persons) then it is an Aristocracy; If All (that is, the General Assembly of the People) then it is a Democracy.

Of all Governments the Monarchical, as most resembling the Divinity, and nearest approaching to perfection (Unity being the perfection of all things) hath ever been esteemed the most excellent.

Ἐπιβασιλευσὶν ἀποκρίσιν : ἰς καὶ ἐστὶν.

Ἐπιβασιλευσὶν.

F 3

For

102 The present State

For the transgressions of a Land, many are the Princes or Rulers thereof, Prov. 28. 2.

Of Monarchies some are Despotical, where the Subjects like Servants are at the Arbitrary Power and Will of their Sovereign, as the Turks and Barbarians: Others Political or Paternal, where the Subjects like Children under a Father, are governed by equal and just Laws consented and sworn unto by the King; as is done by all Christian Princes at their Coronations.

As the French pretend from their Law Sallique.

Of Paternal Monarchies, some are Hereditary, where the Crown descends either only to Heirs Male, as in France; or next of Blood, as in Spain, England, &c. Others Elective, where upon the death of every Prince, without respect had to the Heirs or next of Blood, another by Solemn Election is appointed to succeed, as in Poland and Hungary; and till of late in Denmark and Bohemia.

Of Hereditary Paternal Monarchies

of England. 103

chies, some are dependent and holden of Earthly Potentates, and are obliged to do Homage for the same; as the Kingdoms of Scotland (though this be stiffly denied by Scotch Writers) and of Man, that held in Capite of the Crown of England, and the Kingdom of Naples, holden of the Pope; others independent, holden only of God, acknowledging no other Superior upon Earth.

England is an Hereditary Paternal Monarchy, governed by one Supreme, Independent, and Undeposable Head, according to the known Laws and Customs of the Kingdom.

It is a Free Monarchy, challenging above many other European Kingdoms; a freedom from all subjection to the Emperour or Laws of the Empire; for that the Roman Emperours obtaining anciently the Dominion of this Land by force of Arms; and afterwards abandoning the same, the Right by the Law of

F 4 Nations

Nations returned to the former Owners *pro derelicto*, as *Civilians* speak.

It is a Monarchy free from all manner of Subjection to the *Bishop of Rome*, and thereby from divers inconveniencies and burdens, under which the neighbouring Kingdoms groan: as *Appeals to Rome* in sundry *Ecclesiastical Suits*, *Provisions*, and *Dispensations*, in several cases to be procured from thence; many *Tributes* and *Taxes* paid to that *Bishop*, &c.

It is a *Monarchy* free from all *Interregnum*, and with it from many mischiefs whereunto *Elective Kingdoms* are subject.

England is such a Monarchy, as that, by the necessary subordinate Concurrence of the Lords and Commons in the making and repealing all Statutes or Acts of Parliament, it hath the main advantages of an *Aristocracy* and of a *Democracy*, and yet free from the disadvantages and evils of either.

It

It is such a Monarchy, as by a most admirable temperament affords very much to the *Industry*, *Liberty*, and *Happiness* of the *Subject*, and reserves enough for the *Majesty* and *Prerogative* of any King that will own his People as *Subjects*, not as *Slaves*.

It is a Kingdom that of all the Kingdoms of the World is most like the Kingdom of *Jesus Christ*; whose yoke is easie, whose burden is light.

It is a Monarchy that without interruption hath been continued almost 1000 years, (and till of late) without any attempts of change of that Government: so that to this sort of Government the English seem to be naturally inclined, and therefore during the late *Bouleversations* or over-turnings, when all the Art that the Devil or Man could imagine, was industriously made use of to change this Monarchy into a *Democracy*, this Kingdom into a *Common-wealth*, the most and the best of English men,

F 5

the

the general Spirit and Genius of the Nation (not so much the Presbyterian or Royalist) by mighty, though invisible, influence, concurred at once to restore their exiled Sovereign. and re-establish that antient Government.

CHAP. IV.

Of the KING of ENGLAND, and therein of His Name, Title, Arms, Dominions, Patrimony, Revenue, and Strength: Of his Person, Office, Power, Prerogative, Supremacy, Sovereignty, Divinity, and Respect.

The King is so called from the Name, Saxon word *Koning*, intimating Power and Knowledge, wherewith every Sovereign should especially be invested.

The Title antiently of the Saxon Tit'e. King Edgar was *Anglorum Basileus & Dominus quatuor Marium*, viz. the British, German, Irish, and Deucaliedonian Seas; and sometimes *Anglorum Basileus omniumque Regum, Insularum, Oceanique Britanniam*

CHAP.

tanniam circumjacentis, cunctarumque Nationum qua infra eam includuntur, Imperator & Dominus.

The Modern Title more modest, is, *Dei Gratia* of England, Scotland, France and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith.

The King onely is *Dei Gratia* simply (*i. e.*) from the favour of none but God; and the Archbishops and Bishops, to whom that Title is given, must understand, *Dei gratia & Regis*, or *Dei gratia & voluntate Regis*.

Defender of the Faith; was anciently used by the Kings of England, as appears by several Charters granted to the University of Oxford, but in the year 1521 more affixt by a Bull from Pope Leo the Tenth for a Book written by Henry the Eighth against Luther, in defence of some points of the Romish Religion; but since continued by Act of Parliament for defence of the *Ancient Catholick and Apostolick Faith*.

Præ-

Primogenitus Ecclesia belongs to the Kings of England, because their Predecessor *Lucius* was the first King that embraced Christianity.

Christianismus was by the *Lateran Council* under Pope *Julius* the 2d, conferred on the Kings of England in the 5th year of *Henry* the 8th though before used by *Henry* the 7th and since only by the French King.

The Title of *Grace* was first given to the King about the time of *H. 4.* to *H. 6.* *Excellent Grace*, to *Ed. 4.* *High and Mighty Prince*, to *Hen. 8.* first *Highness* then *Majesty*, and now *Sacred Majesty*; after the Custom of the Eastern Emperours, that used *Αγία Βασιλεια*.

The King of England in his Publick Instruments and Letters, stiles himself *Nos*, *We*, in the Plural Number; before King *John's* time the Kings used the Singular Number, which Custom is still seen in the end of Writs, *Teste meipso apud Westm.*

In

110 The present State

In speaking to the King is used often (besides *Your Majesty*) *Syr*, from *Cyr*, in the *Greek* Κυρ an Abbreviation of Κυριος and Κυριου , *Dominus*, much used to the *Greek* Emperours; but *Syr* or *Domine* is now in *England* become the ordinary word to all of better rank, even from the King to the Gentleman. It was antiently in *England* given to *Lords*, afterwards to *Knights*, and to *Clergymen*, prefixt before their Christian Names; now in that manner only to *Baronets* and *Knights of the Bath*, and *Knights Batchelours*: yet in *France* *Syr* or *Syre* is reserved only for their King.

About the time that our Saviour lived on Earth, there was a Jewish Sect, whose Ring-leader was one *Judas of Galilee*, mentioned *Acts* 5. 37. that would not give this Title of *Sir* or *Dominus* to any man; affirming that it was proper only to God, and stood (not unlike our new Fanaticks, called *Quakers*) so perversely for such Nominal Liberty, (being

of England.

111

(being in other points meer *Pharisees*) that no penalties could force them to give this honorary Title to any man, no not to the Emperour; *uti videre est apud Josephum & alios. Sed hoc obiter.*

Arms are Ensigns of Honour born in Shield for distinction of Families, and descendable as hereditary to Posterity; but were not fixed generally in *England* nor *France* till after the Wars in the *Holy-Dand*, about 400 years ago, unless it were in the Kings of *Europe*.

The *Saxon* Kings before the Conquest bare *Azure* a *Crosse Formy* between four *Martlets Or*.

Afterward the *Danish* Kings reigning in *England* bare *Or* *Semi de Harts Gules*, 3 *Lyons Passant Gardant Azure*.

After the Conquest the Kings of *England* bare two *Leopards*, born first by the Conquerour as Duke of *Normandy*, till the time of *Hen. 2.* who in right of his Mother annex her

her Paternal Coat, the *Lyon of Aquitaine*, which being of the same *Field, Metal, and Form* with the *Leopards*, from thenceforward they were joyntly marshalled in one *Shield*, and *Blazoned 3 Lyons*, as at present.

King *Edward the Third* in right of his Mother claiming the *Crown of France*, with the *Arms of England* quartered the *Arms of France*, which then were *Azure, Semy Flower-de-luces Or*: afterwards changed to *3 Flower deluces*: whereupon *H. 5.* of *England* caused the *English Arms* to be changed likewise: King *James* upon the *Union of England and Scotland*, caused the *Arms of France and England* to be quartered with *Scotland and Ireland*, and are thus blazoned:

The King of *England* beareth for his *Soveraign Ensigns Armorial* as followeth:

In the first place *Azure, 3 Flower-deluces Or*; for the *Regal Arms of France* quartered with the *Imperial En-*

Ensigns of England, which are *Gules three Lyons Passant Gardant in Pale Or*. In the second place, within a double *Tressure counter-flowered de lys Or*, a *Lyon rampant Gules* for the *Royal Armes of Scotland*. In the third place, *Azure an Irish Harp Or, stringed Argent*, for the *Royal Ensigns of Ireland*. In the fourth place as in the first, All within the *Garter*, the chief *Ensign* of that most Honourable Order, above the same an *Helmet* answerable to His Majesties *Soveraign Jurisdiction*; upon the same a rich *Mantle* of *Cloth of Gold doubled Ermine*, adorned with an *Imperial Crown*, and surmounted for a *Crest* by a *Lyon Passant Gardant Crowned* with the like; supported by a *Lyon Rampant Gardant Or, Crowned* as the former, and an *Unicorn Argent Gorged*, with a *Crown*; thereto a *Chain* affixt, passing between his fore-legs and reflex over his back *Or*; both standing upon a *Compartment* placed underneath, and in the *Table*

114 The present State

Table of the Compartment His Majesties Royal Motto, *Dieu & mon Droit.*

The Supporters used before the Union of *England* and *Scotland* were the *Dragon* and *Lion.*

The Arms of *France* placed first, for that *France* is the greater Kingdom, and because from the first bearing, those *Flowers* have been alwayes *Ensigns* of a Kingdom; whereas the Arms of *England* were originally of *Dukedoms* as aforesaid.

The Motto upon the Garter, *Honi soit qui mal y pense*; that is, *Shame be to him that evil thereof thinketh*, was first given by *Edward 3.* the Founder of that Order, who at first made a solemn Invitation to the most Illustrious Martial Persons of *Europe* to be of this new Order, and that none might believe his design therein was any other than just and honourable, he caused those words to be wrought in every Garter that he bestowed; whereof more

of England.

more in the Chapter of Knights of the Garter.

The Motto *Dieu & mon Droit*, that is, *God and my Right*, was first given by *Richard the First*, to intimate, that the King of *England* holdeth his Empire not in Vassallage of any mortal man, but of God only; and after taken up by *Edward 3.* when he first claimed the Kingdom of *France.*

The Antient *Dominions* of the *Domini-* Kings of *England*, were first *Eng- ans.* land and all the *Seas* round about *Great Britain* and *Ireland*, and all the *Isles* adjacent, even to the *Shores* of all the Neighbour-Nations; and our Law saith the *Sea* is of the *Ligeance* of the King, as well as the *Land*: and as a mark thereof, all ships of *Foreigners* have antiently demanded leave to fish and pass in these *Seas*, and do at this day *Lower* their *Top-sailes* to all the Kings Ships of War; and therefore children born upon those *Seas* (as it some-

116 The present State

sometimes hath happened) are accounted natural born subjects of the King of *England*, and need no Naturalization, as others born out of his Dominions.

To *England* *Henry 1.* annexed *Normandy*, and *Henry 2.* *Ireland*, being stiled only Lord of *Ireland* till 33 *H. 8.* although they had all Kingly Jurisdiction before.

Henry 2. also annexed the Dukedoms of *Guien* and *Anjou*, the Counties of *Poitou*, *Turain*, and *Mayn.* *Edward the first* all *Wales*, and *Edward the Third* the Right, though not the possession of all *France.*

King James added *Scotland*, and since that time there have been super-added sundry considerable Plantations in *America.*

The Dominions of the King of *England* are at this day in Possession (besides his just Right and Title to the Kingdom of *France*) all *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, Three Kingdoms of large extent, with all the

of England.

the Isles, above 40 in number small and great; whereof some very considerable: and all the Seas adjacent. Moreover the Islands of *Jersey*, *Garnsey*, and *Alderny*, Parcel of the Dutchy of *Normandy*; besides those profitable Plantations of *New England*, *Virginia*, *Barbados*, *Jamaica*, *Florida*, *Bermudos*, *New Netherlands*, besides several other Isles and Places in those Quarters, and some in the *East-Indies* and upon the Coast of *Africa*; also upon the main-land of *America*, by right of first discovery: to *Estoitland*, *Terra Corterialis*, *New-found-land*, *Guiana*, the King of *England* hath a Legal Right, though not Possession.

King William the Conquerour Patrimo- getting by right of Conquest all the Lands of *England* (except Lands belonging to the Church, to Monasteries, and Religious Houses) into his own hands in *Demesne*, as Lawyers speak, soon bestowed amongst his

his Subjects a great part thereof, reserving some retribution of Rents and Services, or both to him and his Heirs Kings of England; which reservation, is now, as it was before the Conquest, called the Tenure of Lands; the rest he reserved to himself in *Demesne*, called *Corona Regis Dominica*, *Domaines*, and *Sacra Patrimonia*, *Pradium Domini Regis*, *Directum Dominium*, *cujus nullus est Author nisi Deus*: all other Lands in England being held now of some Superior, and depend mediately or immediately on the Crown; but the Lands possess'd by the Crown, being held of none, can *eschear* to none; being *sacred*, cannot become *prophane*: are or should be permanent and inalienable. Which Royal Domaines are (by Time, the Gift and Bounty of our Kings, and some Necessities for the preservation of the Weal Publick) too much alienated.

The

The certain *Revenues* of the *Revenue*. Kings of England was antiently greater than of any King in Europe, they enjoying in *Domains* and *Fee-Farm Rents*, almost enough to discharge all the Ordinary Expences of the Crown, without any Tax or Impost upon the Subject.

Upon the happy Restauration of our present King, the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament finding the Crown Revenues much alienated, and the Crown Charges exceedingly encreased by reason of the late vast augmentation of the Revenues and Strength by Sea and Land of our two next Neighbour Nations abroad, and of the many factious, mutinous and rebellious spirits at home, did unanimously conclude that for the Peace and Security, for the Wealth and Honour of the King and Kingdom, it would be necessary to settle upon His Majesty an yearly Revenue of Twelve hundred thousand Pounds; and accordingly

120 The present State

Accordingly with the Kings Consent, at the humble request of the Lords and Commons, there was established by Imposts upon Imported and Exported Goods, upon Liquors drunk in England, and upon Fire-Hearths, so much as was judged would bring up the former impaired Crown Revenues to the said sum. Notwithstanding which, the whole yearly Revenues of the King of England are not above the Twelfth part of the Revenues of his Kingdom; whereas the King of France hath yearly above One hundred and fifty Millions of Livers, that is, about Eleven Millions of Pounds Sterling, and above a Fifth part of the whole Revenues of France.

If this Revenue of our King be truly paid to the King, and brought into the Kings Exchequer (that great Sea, whereinto so many Rivers and Rivolets empty themselves, and from whence are exhaled by the Sun those kind vapors, wherewith is watered this whole Land, and whereby

of England.

whereby all His Majesties Land and Sea Forces (by whose vigilancy we sleep quietly in our Beds) are maintained; and whereby do subsist the several Courts of the King and Royal Family (by which the Honour and Splendor of this Nation is preserved) the several Ambassadors abroad, Great Officers of the Crown, and Judges at home, &c.) If this Revenue be truly paid and brought into the Exchequer, it is sure that in all Europe there is no one Treasury, that with less deceit, or less charge of Officers, doth reimburse the same.

It was complained by Hen. 4. of France, *Que les despens que faisoient les Officiers de l'Espagne montoient a plus que la Taille*; That the Charges of the Exchequer Officers exceeded the Income; and that there were then Thirty thousand Officers to collect and wait on the Revenues: whereas here cannot be any other just complaint in England, but only that the necessary

G Charges

122 **The present State**

Charges of the Crown are of late so great, that the Kings settled Revenue cannot defray them; and yet too many of his Subjects grudge to have those Revenues augmented, looking upon every little payment through a Magnifying Glass, whereby it appears a great Grievance, and never making use of those Prospective Glasses (Moral and Civil Science) whereby they might see afar off the calamity that is coming on like an armed man, and cannot without such payments be prevented.

The King of *England's* Revenues were never raised by any of those fordid base wayes used in other Countries, as by sale of Honours, sale of Magistracies; sale of Offices of Justice and Law; by Merchandising, by a General Impost upon all manner of Victuals and Clothes; by *Puertos secos*, or Impost upon all Goods at the entrance into any Inland County, or Inland City; by Pensions from Confederates, upon pretence of Protection, &c. But

of England.

But the Revenues of the King of *England* consist either in Demefnes, (as afore) or in Fee Farm Rents, in Lands belonging to the Principality of *Wales*, Dutchy of *Cornwall*, and Dutchy of *Lancaster*, in Tenths and First-Fruits, in Reliefs, Fines, Amercements, and Confiscations; but more especially of late in those few Imposts afore-mentioned.

The mighty power of the King *Strength* of *England* before the Conjunction of *Scotland*, and total subjection of *Ireland*, which were usually at enmity with him, was notoriously known to the World, and sufficiently felt by our Neighbour-Nations: What his Strength hath been since, was never fully tried by King *James* or King *Charles the First*, their Parliaments and People having upon all occasions been refractory, and thwarting those good Kings designs; but now, that the Parliaments of all the Three Kingdoms seem to vie which shall more readily comply
G 2 with

124 **The present State**

with their Sovereign's Desires and Designs, it is not easie to comprehend what mighty things His Majesty now rainging might attempt and effect. But let him be considered abstractly, as King only of *England*, which is like a huge Fortres or Garrisoned Town, fenced not only with strong Works, her Port-Towns, with a wide and deep Ditch the Sea, but guarded also with excellent Out-Works, the strongest and best-built Ships of War in the World; then so abundantly furnisht within with Men and Horse, with Victuals and Ammunition, with Clothes and Money, that if all the Potentates of *Europe* should conspire (which God forbid) they could hardly distress it. *Her home-bred Wares are sufficient to maintain her, and nothing but her home-bred Wars enough to destroy her.*

This for the Defensive Strength of the King of *England*, now for his Offensive Puissance; how formidable must he be to the World, when they

of England.

they shall understand that the King of *England* is well able, when ever he is willing, to raise of English men Two hundred thousand, and of English Horse Fifty thousand (for so many during the late Rebellion, were computed to be in Arms on both sides) yet (which is admirable) scarce any miss of them in any City, Town or Village; and when they shall consider that the valiant and martial Spirit of the English, their natural agility of Body, their patience, hardiness, and stedfastness is such, and their fear of death so little, that no Neighbour-Nation upon *equal number and terms* scarce durst ever abide Battel with them either at Sea or at Land: when they shall consider, that for transporting of an Army, the King of *England* hath at command 100 excellent Ships of War, and can hire 200 stout English Merchant Ships, little inferiour to ships of War, that he can soon man the same with the best Sea-soldiers (if not the best

G 3 **Mariners.**

Mariners) in the whole World. And that for maintaining such a mighty Fleet sufficient money for a *competent time* may be raised only by a Land-Tax, and for a *long time* by a moderate Excise upon such Commodities only as naturally occasion Excess or Luxury, Wantonness, Idleness, Pride, or Corruption of Manners.

In a word, when they shall consider, that by the most commodious and advantageous Scituation of *England*, the King thereof must be Master of the Sea, and that as on Land, whosoever is Master of the Field, is said to be also Master of every Town when it shall please him; so he that is Master of the Sea, may be said in some sort to be Master of the World: for he is at liberty to begin or end a War, where, when, and upon what Terms he pleaseth, and to extend his Conquests even to the *Antipodes*.

Rex

Rex Anglia est Persona mixta Personae cum Sacerdote, say our Lawyers. He is a Priest as well as a King.

He is anointed with *Oyle*, as the Priests were at first, and afterward the Kings of *Israel*; to intimate that his Person is *Sacred* and *Spiritual*: and therefore at the Coronation hath put upon him a *Sacerdotal Garment* called the *Dalmatica*, or *Colobium*, and other Priestly Vests; and before the Reformation of *England*, when the Cup in the Lords Supper was denied to the Laity, the King as a Spiritual Person received in both kinds: He is capable of *Spiritual Jurisdiction*, of holding of *Tithes*; all *Extra-Parochial Tithes*, some Proxies, and other Spiritual Profits belong to the King; of which Laymen both by Common and Canon Law are pronounced incapable.

He is an *External Bishop* of the Church, as *Constantine* the Emperour said of himself, Ἐγὼ δὲ τῶν

G 4

ἐκτὸς

αὐτός ὑπὸ θεοῦ καθιερούμενος Ἐπίσκοπος
 ἐν ἡμῖν; *But I am constituted Bishop
 for external things of the Church.*
Rex idem hominum Phœbique Sacerdos.

He is, as the Roman Emperors, Christian as well as Heathen, stiled themselves, *Pontifex Max.* He is the Supreme *Pastor* of *England*, and hath not only Right of Ecclesiastical Government, but also of exercising some Ecclesiastical Function, so far as *Solomon* did, *1 Kings 8.* when he blessed the People, consecrated the Temple, and pronounced that Prayer which is the Pattern now for Consecration of all Churches and Chappels; but all the Ministerial Offices belong to the *Bishops* and *Priests*, as the Administration of Sacraments, Preaching, and other Church Offices and Duties.

Of this *Sacred Person* of the King, of the *life* and *safety* thereof, the Laws and Customs of *England* are so tender, that they have made it *High Treason*, onely to *imagine* or *intend* the *death* of the *King*.
 And

And because by imagining or conspiring the death of the Kings *Counsellors* or *Great Officers* of his *Honshold*, the destruction of the King hath thereby sometimes ensued, and is usually aimed at (saith *Stat. 3 H. 7.*) that also was made *felony*, to be punished with death, although in all other Cases Capital the Rule is, *Voluntas non reputabitur pro facto*, and an English Man may not in other Cases be punished with death, unless the Act follow the Intent.

The Law of *England* hath so high esteem of the Kings *Person*, that to offend against those *Persons* and those *things* that represent his *Sacred Person*, as to kill some of the *Crown Officers*, or the Kings *Judges* executing their Office, or to counterfeit the Kings *Seals*, or his *Moneys*, is made *High-Treason*; because by all these the Kings *Person* is represented: and *High-Treason* is in the Eye of the Law so horrid, that besides loss of *Life* and *Honour*, *Real* and *Personal Estate* to the Criminal,

minal, *his Heirs* also are to lose the same for ever, and to be ranked amongst the *Peasantry* and *Ignoble*, till the King shall please to restore them. *Est enim tam grave crimen* (saith *Bracton*) *ut vix permittatur heredibus quod vivant*. High Treason is so grievous a Crime, that the Law not content with the Life and Estate and Honour of the Criminal, can hardly endure to see his heirs survive him.

And rather than Treason against the Kings *Person* shall go unpunisht, the Innocent in some Cases shall be punished; for if an Idiot or Lunatic (who cannot be said to have any will, and so cannot offend) during his Idiocy or Lunacy, shall kill, or go about to kill the King, he shall be punished as a Traytor; and yet being *Non compos mentis*, the Law holds that he cannot commit Felony or Petit-Treason, nor other sorts of High-Treason.

Moreover, for the precious regard of the *Person* of the King, by an

an Antient Record it is declared, that no *Physick* ought to be administered to him, without good *Warrant*, this *Warrant* to be signed by the Advice of his *Council*; no other *Physick* but what is mentioned in the *Warrant* to administer to him; the *Physicians* to prepare all things with their own hands, and not by the hands of any *Apothecary*; and to use the assistance only of such *Chirurgcons* as are prescribed in the *Warrant*.

And so precious is the *Person* and *Life* of the King, that every Subject is obliged and bound by his Allegiance to defend his *Person* in his *Natural* as well as *Politick* Capacity, with his own *Life* and *Limbs*; wherefore the Law saith, that the *Life* and *Member* of every *Subject* is at the service of the *Sovereign*. He is *Pater Patrie* & *Dulce erit pro Patre Patria mori*, to lose life or limb in defending him from Conspiracies, Rebellions, or Invasions, or assisting him in the Execution of his

his Laws, should seem a pleasant thing to every loyal hearted Subject.

Office.

The Office of the King of England in the Laws of King Edward the Confessor is thus described, *Rex quia Vicarius summi Regis est, ad hoc constituitur ut Regnum terrenum & populum Domini & super omnia Sanctam Ecclesiam ejus veneretur, rogat & ab injuriis defendat*; and (according to the Learned Fortescue) is, *Pugnare bella populi sui & eos rectissime judicare*. To fight the Battels of his People, and to see Right and Justice done unto them.

Or (according to another) it is to protect and govern his People, so that they may (if possible) lead quiet and peaceable lives in all Godliness and Honesty under him.

Or more particular (as is promised at the Coronation) to preserve the Rights and Priviledges of the Church and Clergy, the Royal Prerogatives belonging to the Crown, the

the Laws and Customs of the Realm, to do Justice, shew Mercy, keep Peace and Unity, &c.

The King for the better performance of this great and weighty Office, had certain *Jura Majestatis*, extraordinary Powers, Preeminencies, and Priviledges, inherent in the Crown, called anciently by Lawyers *Sacra Sacrorum*, and *Flowers of the Crown*, but commonly *Royal Prerogatives*; whereof some the King holds by the Law of Nations, others by *Common Law*, excellent above all Laws in upholding a free Monarchy, and exalting the Kings Prerogative) and some by *Statute-Law*.

The King only, and the King alone, by his Royal Prerogative, hath Power without Act of Parliament to *declare War, make Peace, send and receive Ambassadors, make Leagues and Treaties* with any Foreign States, give *Commissions* for *levying Men and Arms* by Sea and Land,

134 **The present State**

Land, or for pressing Men if need require; dispose of all *Magazines, Ammunition, Castles, Fortresses, Ports, Havens, Ships of War, and Publick Moneys*; appoint the *Metal, Weight, Purity, and Value* thereof; and by his *Prædication* make any *Foreign Coyn* to be lawful Money of *England*.

By his *Royal Prerogative* may of his meer Will and Pleasure *Convoke, Adjourn, Prorogue, Remove, and Dissolve* Parliaments; may to any *Bill* passed by both *Houses of Parliament*, refuse to give (without rendering any reason) his *Royal Assent*, without which a *Bill* is as a Body without a Soul. May at pleasure encrease the number of the Members of both Houses, by creating more *Barons*, and bestowing *Priviledges* upon any other Towns to send *Burgesses* to *Parliament*. May call to *Parliament* by *Writ* whom he in his Princely *Wisdom* thinketh fit, and may refuse to send his *Writ* to some others that have sate in former Parlia-

of England.

135

Parliaments. Hath alone the choice and nomination of all *Commanders* and other Officers at Land and Sea; the choice and nomination of all *Magistrates, Counsellours, and Officers of State*, of all *Bishops*; and other *High Dignities* in the *Church*; the bestowing of all Honours both of higher and of lower Nobility of *England*; the Power of determining *Rewards and Punishments*.

By his *Letters Patent* may erect new *Counties, Bishopricks, Universities, Cities, Burroughs, Colledges, Hospitals, Schools, Fairs, Markets, Courts of Justice, Forests, Chases, Free-Warrens, &c.*

The King by his *Prerogative* hath power to *enfranchise* an *Alien* and make him a *Denison*; whereby he is enabled to purchase Leases of Houses and Lands, and to bear some Offices. Hath power to grant Letters of *Mart* or *Reprisal*.

The King by his *Prerogative* hath had at all times the Right of *Purveyance* or *Pre-emption* of all sorts of

of Viſuals near the Court, and to take *Horses, Carts, Boats, Ships,* for his Carriages at reasonable Rates; also by Proclamation to set reasonable Rates and Prices upon *Flesh, Fish, Fowl, Oats, Hay, &c.* which His Majesty now Raigning was pleased to release, and in lieu thereof, to accept of some other recompence.

Debts due to the King, are in the first place to be satisfied, in case of *Executors* and *Administrators*; and until the Kings Debt be satisfied, he may protect the *Debtor* from the *Arrest* of other *Creditors*.

May distrain for the *whole Rent* upon *one* Tenant that holdeth not the whole Land; may require the *Ancestors* Debt of the *Heir*, though not especially bound, is not obliged to *demand* his Rent as others are. May sue in what Court he please, and distrain where he list.

No Proclamation can be made but by the King.

No

No Protection for a Defendant to be kept off from a Suit, but by him, and that because he is actually in his Service.

He only can give *Patents*, in case of losses by Fire or otherwise, to receive the *Charitable Benevolences* of the People; without which no man may ask it publickly.

No Forest, Chase, or Park to be made, nor Castle to be built, without the Kings Authority.

The sale of his *Goods* in an open Market will not take away his property therein.

Where the King hath granted a Fair with Toll to be paid, yet his *Goods* there shall be exempted from all Toll.

No Occupancy shall be good against the King, nor shall Entry before him prejudice him.

His *Servants* in ordinary are privileged from serving in any Offices that require their attendance, as *Sheriff, Constable, Churchwarden, &c.*

All

All *Receivers* of Moneys for the King, or *Accomptants* to him for any of his *Revenues*, their *Persons*, *Lands*, *Goods*, *Heirs*, *Executors*, *Administrators*, are chargeable for the same at all times, for, *Nullum tempus occurrit Regi.*

His *Debtor* hath a kind of Prerogative remedy by a *Quo minus* in the *Exchequer* against all other Debtors, or against whom they have any cause of Personal Action; supposing that he is thereby disabled to pay the King: and in this Suit the Kings Debtor being Plaintiff, hath some Priviledges above others.

In *Doubtful Cases*, *Semper presumitur pro Rege.*

No Statute restraineth the King, except he be *especially named* therein. The quality of his Person alters the descent of *Gavelkind*, the Rules of *Joynt Tenancy*; no *Estoppel* can bind him, nor *Judgment final* in a *Writ of Right*.

Judge

Judgements entred against the Kings Title, are entred with a *Salvo Jure Domini Regis*, that if at any time the Kings Council at Law can make out his Title better; that Judgement shall not prejudice him, which is not permitted to the Subject.

The King by his Prerogative may demand reasonable *Aid-Money* of his Subjects to knight his eldest Son at the age of 15, and to marry his Eldest Daughter at the age of 7 years; which reasonable Aid is Twenty Shillings for every Knights Fee, and as much for every Twenty pound a year in *Socage*. Moreover, if the King be taken Prisoner, *Aid-Money* is to be paid by the Subjects to set him at liberty.

The King upon reasonable causes, him thereunto moving, may *protect* any man against Suits at Law, &c.

In all Cases where the King is party, his *Officers* with an *Arrest* by force of a *Process* at Law may enter

ter (and if entrance be denied) may break open the House of any man, although every mans House is said to be his Castle, and hath a privilege to protect him against all other Arrests.

A Benefice or Spiritual Living is not full against the King by Institution only, without Induction, although it be so against a Subject

None but the King can hold plea of false Judgements in the Court of his Tenants.

The King of England by his Prerogative is *Summus Regni Custos*, and hath the Custody of the Persons and Estates of such as for want of understanding cannot govern themselves or serve the King; so the Persons and Estates of *Ideots* and *Lunaticks* are in the Custody of the King, that of *Ideots* to his own use, and that of *Lunaticks* to the use of the next Heir. So the Custody or Wardships of all such Infants whose Ancestors held their Lands by Tenure in *Capite* or Knight-service, were
ever

ever since the Conquest in the Kings of England, to the great honour and benefit of the King and Kingdom; though some abuses made some of the people out of love with their good, and the Right of that part of his just Prerogative.

The King by his Prerogative is *Ultimus Hares Regni*, and is (as the Great Ocean is of all Rivers) the receptacle of all Estates when no Heir appears, for this cause all Estates for want of Heirs or by forfeiture, revert or escheat to the King. All Spiritual Benefices for want of Presentation by the Bishop, are lapsed at last to the King: All *Treasure-Trove* (that is, *Money, Gold, Silver, Plate, or Bullion* found (and the Owners unknown) belongs to the King; so all *ways, Strays, Wrecks*, not granted away by him or any former Kings; all *Wast ground* or *Land recovered from the Sea*; all Lands of *Aliens* dying before *Naturalization* or *Denization*, and all things whereof the property is not known.

known. All *Gold* and *Silver Mines* in whose ground soever they are found; *Royal Fishes*, as *Whales*, *Sturgeons*, *Dolphins*, &c. *Royal Fowl*, as *Swans*, not markt and swimming at liberty on the River, belong to the King.

In the *Church* the Kings Prerogative and Power is extraordinary great. He only hath the *Patronage* of all *Bishopricks*, none can be chosen but by his *Conge d'Esire*; whom he hath first *nominated*; none can be *consecrated* Bishop or take possession of the Revenues of the Bishoprick without the Kings special Writ or Assent. He is the *Guardian* or *Nursing Father* of the Church, which our Kings of *England* did so reckon amongst their principal cares, as in the 23d year of King *Edward* the First it was alledged in a pleading and allowed. The King hath power to call a *National* or *Provincial Synod*, and by Commissioners or by his *Metropolitans* in their several Jurisdictions to make *Canons*, *Or-*
ders,

ders, *Ordinances*, and *Constitutions*, to introduce into the Church what *Ceremonies* he shall think fit; reform and correct all *Heresies*, *Schismes*, punish *Contempts*, &c. and therein, and thereby to declare what *Doctrines* in the Church are fit to be *publishd* or *professed*, what *Translation* of the *Bible* to be allowed, what *Books* of the *Bible* are *Canonical* and what *Apocryphal*, &c.

In 28 of *Eliz.* when the House of Commons would have passed Bills touching Bishops granting Faculties, conferring Holy Orders, Ecclesiastical Censures, the Oath *Ex Officio*, *Non Residency*, &c. the Queen much incensed, forbad them to meddle in any Ecclesiastical affairs, for that it belonged to her Prerogative, &c.

The King hath power to pardon the violation of *Ecclesiastical Laws*, or to abrogate such as are unfitting or useless; to dispense with the Rigor of Ecclesiastical Laws, and with any thing that is only *prohibitum & malum*

malum per accidens & non malum in se; as for a Bastard to be a Priest, for a Priest to hold two Benefices, or to succeed his Father in a Benefice, or to be Non-Resident, &c.

Hath power to dispense with some Acts of Parliament, Penal Statutes, by *Non Obstante's*, where himself is only concerned; to moderate the rigor of the Laws according to Equity and Conscience, to alter or suspend any particular Law, that he judgeth hurtful to the Common-wealth; to grant special Privileges and Charters to any Subject, to pardon a man by Law condemned; to interpret by his Judges Statutes, and in Cases not defined by Law, to determine and pass Sentence.

And this is that Royal Prerogative which in the hand of a King is a Scepter of Gold, but in the hands of Subjects is a Rod of Iron.

This is that *Jus Corona*, a Law that is parcel of the Law of the Land, part of the Common Law, and

and contained in it, and hath the precedence of all Laws and Customs of England; and therefore void in Law is every Custom *qua exaltat se in Prerogativam Regis*.

Some of these Prerogatives, especially those that relate to Justice and Peace, are so essential to Royalty, that they are for ever inherent in the Crown, and make the Crown: they are like the Sun-beams in the Sun, and as inseparable from it; and therefore it is held by great Lawyers that a Prerogative in point of Government cannot be restrained or bound by Act of Parliament, but is as unalterable as the Laws of the Medes and Persians: wherefore the Lords and Commons (*Rot. Parl. 42. Edw. 3. Numb. 7.*) declared that they could not assent in Parliament to anything that tended to the disherison of the King and the Crown, whereunto they were sworn; no though the King should desire it: and every King of England as he is Debitor *Justitiae* to his People, so is

H he

he in conscience obliged to defend and maintain all the Rights of the Crown in possession, and to endeavour the recovery of those whereof the Crown hath been dispossessed, and when any King hath not Religiously observed his duty in this point, it hath proved of very dreadful consequence; as the first fatal blow to the Church of *England* was given when *Hen. 8.* waving his own Royal Prerogative, referred the redress of the Church to the *House of Commons* (as the Lord *Herbert* observes *Hist. Hen. 8.*) So the greatest blow that ever was given to Church and State, was when the late King parting with his absolute Power of dissolving *Parliaments* gave it (though only *pro illa vice*) to the *Two Houses of Parliament*. And indeed it greatly concerns all Subjects (though it seem a *Paradox*) to be far more solicitous that the King should maintain and defend his won *Prerogative* and *Pre-eminence*, than their *Rights and Liberties*;

berties; the truth whereof will appear to any man that sadly considers the mischiefs and inconveniences that necessarily follow the diminution of the Kings Prerogative above all that can be occasioned by some particular infringements of the Peoples Liberties. As on the other side it much concerns every King of *England* to be very careful of the Subjects just Liberties, according to that Golden Rule of the best of Kings, *Charles I.* *That the Kings Prerogative is to defend the Peoples Liberties, and the Peoples Liberties strengthen the Kings Prerogative.*

Whatsoever things are proper to *supremacy*, *Supreme Magistrates*, as *Crowns, Scepter* and *Purple Robe*, *Golden Globe*, *Sovereignty*, and *Holy Unction*, have as long appertained to the King of *England* as to any other Prince in *Europe*. He holdeth not his Kingdom in *Vassalage* nor receiveth his *Investiture* or *Installment* from another. Acknowledgeth no *Superiority* to any

but God only. Nor to the *Emperour*, for *Omnem potestatem habet Rex Anglia in Regno suo quam Imperator vendicat in Imperio*; and therefore the Crown of England hath been declared in Parliaments long ago to be an *Imperial Crown*, and the King to be *Emperour of England and Ireland*, and might wear an Imperial Crown, although he chooseth rather to wear a *Triumphant Crown*, such as was antiently worn by the Emperours of *Rome*, and that because his Predecessors have triumpht, not only over *Five Kings of Ireland*, but also over the *Welsh, Scotch, and French Kings*.

He acknowledgeth onely Precedence to the Emperour, *Eo quod Antiquitate Imperium omnia Regna superare creditur*.

As the King is *Ἀυτοκράτωρ* in the State, so he is *Ἀρχιεπίσκοπος* in the Church. He acknowledgeth no Superiority to the Bishop of *Rome*, whose long arrogated Authority in
England

England was 1535 in a full Parliament of all the Lords *Spiritual* as well as *Temporal* declared null, and the King of England declared to be by *Antient Right* in all Causes over all Persons as well Ecclesiastical as Civil, *Supreme Governour*.

The King is *Summus totius Ecclesie Anglicane Ordinarius*, Supreme Ordinary in all the Dioceses of England; *Ἐπίσκοπος Ἰσθμίου Ἑπιπέδαλου* and for his Superintendency over the whole Church, hath the *Tenths* and *First-Fruits* of all Ecclesiastical Benefices.

The King hath the Supreme Right of Patronage over all England, called *Patronage Paramount* over all the Ecclesiastical Benefices in England; so that if the mean Patron as aforesaid present not in due time, nor the Ordinary, nor Metropolitan, the Right of Presentation comes to the King, beyond whom it cannot go. The King is Lord Paramount, Supreme Landlord of all the Lands of England,

and all landed men are mediately or immediately his Tenants by some Tenure or other; for no man in England but the King hath *Allodium & Directum Dominium*, the sole and independent Property or Domain in any Land. He that hath the Fee, the *Jus perpetuum* and *Utile Dominium*, is obliged to a duty to his Sovereign for it: so it is not simply his own, he must swear fealty to some Superiour.

The King is *Summus totius Regni Anglicani Justiciarius*, Supreme Judge, or Lord Chief Justice of all England. He is the Fountain from whence all Justice is derived, no Subject having here as in France, *Haute moyenne & basse Justice*. He alone hath the Sovereign power in the Administration of Justice, and in the Execution of the Law, and whatsoever power is by him committed to others, the *dernier resort* is still remaining in himself; so that he may sit in any Court, and take Cognisance of any Cause (as anti-

ently

ently Kings sate in the Court now called the *Kings Bench*, Henry the Third in his *Court of Exchequer*, and Hen. 7. and King James sometimes in the *Star-Chamber*) except in Felonies, Treasons, &c. wherein the King being Plaintiff and so Party, he sits not personally in Judgement, but doth perform it by Delegates.

From the King of England there lies no Appeal in Ecclesiastical affairs to the Bishop of Rome, as it doth in other principal Kingdoms of Europe; nor in Civil affairs to the Emperour, as in some of the Spanish and other Dominions of Christendom; nor in either to the People of England (as some of late have dreamt) who in themselves, or by their Representatives in the House of Commons in Parliament, were ever *Subordinate* and never *Superior*, nor so much as *Co-ordinate* to the King of England.

The King being the onely Sovereign and Supreme Head, is furnisht

with Plenary Power, Prerogative, and Jurisdiction to render Justice to every Member within his Dominions; whereas some Neighbour Kings do want a full power to do Justice in all Causes to all their Subjects, or to punish all Crimes committed within their own Dominions, especially in *Causes Ecclesiastical*.

In a word, *Rex Anglia neminem habet in suis Dominiis Superiorem nec Parem, sed omnes sub illo, ille sub nullo nisi tantum sub Deo, a quo secundus, post quem primus, ante omnes & super omnes (in suis ditionibus) Deos & Homines.*

Divinity. The Title of *Dii* or *Gods*, plurally is often in Holy Writ by God himself attributed to Great Princes, because as Gods Vicars or *Vice-dii* upon Earth, they represent the Majesty and Power of the God of Heaven and Earth: and to the end that the people might have so much the higher esteem and more reverend
awfulness

awfulness of them; for if that fails, all Order fails; and thence all *Impiety* and *Calamity* follows.

The Substance of the Titles of God was also used by the Antient Christian Emperours, as *Divinitas nostra & Aeternitas nostra, &c.* as imperfectly and analogically in them, though essentially and perfectly only in God; and the good Christians of those times out of their excess of respect, were wont to swear by the Majesty of the Emperour (as *Joseph* once by the life of *Pharaoh*) and *Vegetius* a learned Writer of that Age seems to justify it; *Nam Imperatori (saith he) tanquam presenti & corporali Deo fidelis est prestanda Devotio & pervigil impendendus famulatus; Deo enim servimus cum fideliter diligimus eum, qui Deo regnat Autore.* For a faithful Devotion to the Emperour as to a corporal god upon earth, ought to be performed, and a very diligent service to be paid: for then we truly serve God,
H 5 when

154 The present State

when with a loyal affection we love him whom God hath placed to raige over us.

So the Laws of England looking upon the King as a God upon earth, do attribute unto him divers excellencies that belong properly to God alone, as Justice in the Abstract; *Rex Anglia non potest cuiquam injuriam facere.* So also Infallibility, *Rex Anglia non potest errare.* And as God is perfect, so the Law will have no Imperfection found in the King.

No Negligence or Laches, no Folly, no Infamy, no stain or corruption of blood; for by taking of the Crown, all former, though just Attainders (and that by Act of Parliament) is *ipso facto* purged. No Nonage or Minority, for his Grant of Lands, though held in his Natural not Politick Capacity, cannot be avoided by Nonage: Higher than this the Law attributeth a kind of immortality to the King, *Rex Anglia non moritur*; his Death is in Law

of England.

Law termed the *Demise* of the King, because thereby the Kingdom is demised to another: He is said not subject to Death, because he is a Corporation in himself that liveth for ever, all *Interregna* being in England unknown, the same moment that one King dies, the next Heir is King fully and absolutely without any Coronation, Ceremony, or Act to be done *ex post facto*.

Moreover, the Law seemeth to attribute to the King a certain *Omnipresency*, that the King is in a manner every where, in all his Courts of Justice, and therefore cannot be *non-suited* (as Lawyers speak,) In all his Palaces, and therefore all Subjects stand bare in the Presence Chamber, wheresoever the Chair of State is placed, though the King be many miles distant from thence. He hath a kind of universal influence over all his Dominions, every soul within his Territories may be said to feel at all times his Power and his Goodness, *Omnium Domos Regis Vigilis*

gilia defendit, Omnium Otium illius Labor, Omnium Delicias illius Industria, Omnium vacationem illius Occupatio, &c.

So a kind of *Omnipotency*, that the King can, as it were, raise men from death to life, by pardoning whom the Law hath condemned; can create to the highest Dignity and annihilate the same at pleasure.

Divers other semblances of the *Eternal Deity* belong to the King. He in his own Dominions (as God) saith *Vindicta est mihi*, for all punishments do proceed from him in some of his Courts of Justice, and it is not lawful for any Subject to revenge himself.

So he onely can be Judge in his own Cause, though he deliver his Judgement by the Mouth of his Judges.

And yet there are some things that the King of England cannot do. *Rex Anglia nihil injuste potest*, and the King cannot divest himself or his Successors of any part of his *Regal*

gal Power, Prerogative and Authority inherent and annexed to the Crown: not that there is any defect in the Kings Power (as there is none in Gods Power, though he cannot lie, nor do any thing that implies Contradiction:) not but that the King of England hath as absolute a power over all his Subjects as any *Christian Prince* rightfully and lawfully hath or ever had: not but that he still hath a kind of *Omnipotency* not to be disputed, but adored by his Subjects; *Nemo quidem de factis ejus presumat disputare* (saith *Bracton*) *multo minus contra factum ejus ire, nam de Chartis & Factis ejus non debent nec possunt Justicarii, multo minus privata persona, disputare.* Not but that the King may do what he please, without either *opposition* or *resistance*, and without being questioned by his Subjects, for the King cannot be *impleaded* for any Crime; no *Action* lieth against his Person, because the Writ goeth forth in his own Name, and he cannot arrest himself.

himself. If the King should seize the Lands (which God forbid) or should take away the Goods of any particular subject, having no Title by Law so to do; there is no remedy. Onely this, *Locus erit* (saith the same *Bracton*) *supplicationi quod factum suum corrigat & emendet, quod quidem si non fecerit, sufficit ei ad poenam quod Dominum Deum expectet Ultorem.* There may be Petitions and Supplications made that His Majesty will be pleased to rule according to Law, which if he shall refuse to do, it is sufficient that he must expect that the King of Kings will be the Avenger of oppressed Loyal Subjects.

But there are also divers things which the King cannot do, *Salvo Jure, Salvo Juramento, & Salva Conscientia sua*; Because by Oath at his Coronation, and indeed without any Oath, by the Law of *Nature, Nations*, and of *Christianity*, he holds himself bound (as do all other Christian Kings) to protect
and

and defend his people, to do justice, and shew mercy, to preserve Peace and Quietness amongst them, to allow them their just Rights and Liberties, to consent to the Repealing of bad Laws, and to the enacting of good Laws. Two things especially the King of *England* doth not usually do without the consent of his subjects *viz. Make new Laws*, and *raise new Taxes*, there being something of *Odium* in both of them; the one seeming to diminish the Subjects Liberty, and the other to infringe his Property; therefore that all occasion of disaffection towards the King (the Breath of our Nostrils and the light of our Eyes, as he is stiled in holy Scripture) might be avoided; it was most wisely contrived by our Ancestors, that for both these should Petitions and Supplications be first made by the Subject.

These, and divers other Prerogatives rightfully belong, and are enjoyed by the King of *England*.

Never-

Nevertheless the Kings of England usually govern this Kingdom by the ordinary known *Laws* and *Customs* of the Land (as the great God doth the World by the Laws of Nature) yet in some Cases, for the benefit, not damage of this Realm, they make use of their *Prerogatives*, as the King of Kings doth of his Extraordinary Power of Working of *Miracles*.

Lastly, To the Kings of England *quatenus* Kings, doth appertain one *Prerogative* that may be stiled *super-excellent*, if not *miraculous*, which was first enjoyed by that pious and good King Edward the Confessor; which is to remove and to cure the *Struma*, that stubborn Disease, commonly called the *Kings Evill*.

Which manifest Cure is ascribed by some malignant Non-Conformists to the power of Fancy and exalted Imagination, but what can that contribute to small Infants, whereof great numbers are cured every

every year. The manner of the Cure is briefly thus:

There is an appointed short form of Divine Service, wherein are read (besides some short Prayers pertinent to the occasion) two portions of Scripture taken out of the Gospel, and at these words [*They shall lay their hands on the Sick and they shall recover*] the King gently draws both his hands over the fore of the sick person; and those words are repeated at the touch of every one.

Again, at these words [*That light was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world*] pertinently used, if it be considered that that light did never shine more comfortably, if not more visibly, than in the healing of so many leprous and sick persons. At those words the King putteth about the Neck of each sick person a Piece of Gold, called (from the Impression) an *Angel*, being in value about two thirds of a French Pistol.

In

Respect. In consideration of these and other transcendent Excellencies, no King in Christendom nor other Potentate receives from his Subjects more *Reverence*, *Honour*, and *Respect*, than the King of *England*. All his People at their first Addresses *kneel* to him, he is at all times served upon the *Knee*, all Persons (not the Prince or other Heir Apparent excepted) *stand bare* in the presence of the King and in the Presence Chamber, though in the Kings absence. Only it was once indulged by *Q. Mary* for some eminent services performed by *Henry Ratcliffe Earl of Sussex*, that (by Patent) he might at any time be covered in her presence; but perhaps in imitation of the like liberty allowed by King *Philip* her Husband and other Kings of *Spain* at this day, to some of the principal Nobility there called *Grandees of Spain*.

Any

Any thing or Act done in the Kings Presence is presumed to be void of all deceit and evil meaning; and therefore a *Fine* levied in the Kings Court, where the King is presumed to be present, doth bind a *Feme Covert*, a married Woman, and others whom ordinarily the Law doth disable to transact.

The Kings only Testimony of any thing done in his presence, is of as high a nature and credit as any *Record*; and in all *writs* sent forth for dispatch of Justice, he useth no other Witness but himself, *viz. Teste me ipso*.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Of Succession to the Crown of ENGLAND, and of the Kings Minority, Incapacity, and Absence.

The King of England hath right to the Crown by Inheritance and the Laws and Customs of England.

Upon the Death of the King, the next of kindred, though born out of the Dominions of England, or born of parents not Subjects of England, as by the Law and many Examples in the English Histories it doth manifestly appear, is, and is immediately King before any Proclamation, Coronation, Publication, or Consent of Peers or People.

The Crown of England descends from Father to Son and his Heirs,

for want of Sons to the Eldest Daughter and her Heirs, for want of Daughters, to the Brother and his Heirs, and for want of Brother to the Sister and her Heirs. The Salique Law, or rather Custom of France, hath here no more force than it had anciently among the Jews, or now in Spain and other Christian Hereditary Kingdoms. Among Turks and Barbarians that French Custom is still and ever was in use.

In case of descent of the Crown (contrary to the Custom of the descent of Estates among Subjects) the Half Blood shall inherit; so from King Edward the Sixth the Crown and Crown Lands descended to Queen Mary of the half blood, and again to Queen Elizabeth of the half blood to the last Possessor.

At the death of every King die not only the Offices of the Court, but all Commissions granted to the Judges durante bene placito, and of all Justices of Peace.

If

Minority If the King be likely to leave his Crown to an Infant, he doth usually by *Testament* appoint the person or persons that shall have the tuition of him; and sometimes for want of such appointment, a fit person of the Nobility or Bishops is made choice of by the Three States assembled in the name of the Infant King, who by Nature or Alliance hath most Interest in the preservation of the Life and Authority of the Infant, and to whom least benefit can accrue by his Death or Diminution; as the *Uncle* by the *Mother's* side, if the Crown come by the *Father*, and so *vice versa*, is made *Protector*; so during the minority of *Edward 6* his *Uncle* by the *Mother's* side, the *Duke of Somerset* had the tuition of him, and was called *Protector*: and when this Rule hath not been observed (as in the minority of *Edward 5*.) it hath proved of ill consequence.

If

If the King of *England* be *Non Incapaci- compos mentis*, or by reason of an *ty.* incurable disease, weakness, or old age, become incapable of governing, then is made a *Regent, Protector,* or *Guardian*, to govern.

King *Edward 3.* being at last aged, sick, and weak, and by grief for the death of the *Black Prince*, sore broken in body and mind, did of his own will create his fourth Son, *John Duke of Lancaster*, *Guardian*, or *Regent of England*.

If the King be *absent* upon any Foreign Expedition, or otherwise, *Absence.* (which anciently was very usual) the Custom was to constitute a *Viceroy* by Commission under the *Great Seal*, giving him several Titles and Powers according as the necessity of affairs have required; sometimes he hath been called *Lord Warden*, or *Lord Keeper* of the Kingdom, and therewith hath had the general power of a King, as was

was practised during the *Absence* of *Edward the First, Second, and Third*, and of *Henry 5.* but *Henry 6.* to the Title of *Warden or Guardian* added the Stile of *Protector* of the *Kingdom* and of the *Church* of *England*; and gave him so great power in his *absence*, that he was *tantum non Rex* (waving the *Scepter* but not wearing the *Crown*; executing *Laws*, Summoning *Parliaments* under his own *Teste* as *King*, and giving his assent to *Bills* in *Parliament*, whereby they became as binding as any other *Acts*.

Sometimes during the *Kings absence* the *Kingdom* hath been committed to the care of several *Noblemen*, and sometimes of *Bishops*, as less dangerous for attempting any *usurpation* of the *Crown*; sometimes to one *Bishop*, as *Hubert Archbishop* of *Canterbury* was *Viceroy* of *England* for many years; and when *Edward 3.* was in *Flanders* (though his *Son* then but nine years old, had the Name of *Protector*)

rector) *John Stratford* *Arch-bishop* of *Canterbury* was *Governour* both of the *Kings Son* and of the *Realm*.

Lastly, Sometimes to the *Queen*, as two several times during the *absence* of *Henry 8.* in *France*.

CHAP. VI.

Of the QUEEN of ENGLAND.

THE *Queen*, so called from the *Name*: *Saxon Koningin*, whereof the last syllable is pronounced by foreigners as *gheen* in *English*, it being not unusual to cut off the first Syllables; as an *Almes-house* is sometimes called a *Spital* from *Hospital*.

She hath as high *Prerogatives*, *Dignity*, and *State*, during the life of the *King*, as any *Queen* of *Europe*.

I From

Prerogatives.

From the Saxon times the Queen Consort of England, though she be an Alien born, and though during the life of the King she be femme covert (as our Law speaks) yet without any Act of Parliament for Naturalization or Letters Patents for Denization, she may purchase Lands in Fee-simple, make Leases and Grants in her own Name without the King, hath power to give, to sue, to contract, as a femme sole may receive by gift from her Husband, which no other femme covert may do.

She may present by herself to a spiritual Benefice, and in a Quare Impedit brought by Her, plenarty by the presentation of another is no more a Barr against Her, then it is against the King.

She shall not be amerced if she be Non-suited in any Action, &c.

Had anciently a Revenue of Queen Gold, or Aurum Regina, as the Records call it, which was the tenth

tenth part of so much as by the name of Oblata upon Pardons, Gifts, and Grants, &c. came to the King.

Of later times hath had as large a Dower as any Queen in Christendome, hath her Royal Court apart, her Courts and Officers, &c.

The Queen may not be impleaded till first petitioned, shall not be amerced if she be nonsuited as all other Subjects are; if she be Plaintiff the Summons in the Process need not have the solemnity of 15 dayes.

Is reputed the Second Person in the Kingdom. Dignity.

The Law setteth so high a value upon her, as to make it High-Treason to conspire her death, or to violate her Chastity.

Her Officers, as Attorney and Solicitor, for the Queens sake have respect above others, and place within the Barr with the Kings Council.

172 **The present State**

The like honour, the like reverence and respect that is due to the King, is exhibited to the Queen both by Subjects. and Foreigners; and also to the Queen Dowager or Widow Queen, who also above other Subjects loseth not her Dignity, though she should marry a private Gentleman; so Queen Katharine, Widow to King Henry the Fifth, being married to Owen ap Theodore Esquire, did maintain her Action as Queen of England; much less doth a Queen by inheritance, or a Queen Sovereign of England, follow her Husbands condition, nor is subject as other Queens; but Sovereign to her own Husband, as Queen Mary was to King Philip.

CHAP.

of England.

CHAP. VII.
Of the Sons and Daughters of ENGLAND.

The Children of the King of England are called the Sons and Daughters of England, because all the subjects of England have a special interest in them, though the whole power of Education, Marriage, and disposing of them is only in the King

The Eldest Son of the King is Eldest born Duke of Cornwall, and as to Son. that Dutchy, and all the Lands, Honours, Rents, and great Revenues belonging thereunto, he is upon his Birth-day presumed, and by Law taken to be of full age, so that he may that day sue for the Livery of the said Dukedom, and ought of right to obtain the same, as if he had been full 21 years of age. Afterwards he is created Prince of Wales, I 3 whose

174 **The present State**

whose *Investiture* is performed by the Imposition of a *Cap of Estate* and *Coronet* on his Head, as a Token of Principality, and putting into his Hand a *Verge of Gold*, the Emblem of Government, and a *Ring of Gold* on his Finger, to intimate, that he must be a Husband to his Country, and Father to her Children. Also to him is given and granted Letters Patent to hold the said Principality to him and his Heirs Kings of *England*, by which words the separation of this Principality is prohibited. His Mantle which he wears in Parliament is once more doubled, or hath one Guard more than a Duke, and his Coronet of *Crosses* and *Flowers de Luce* and his Cap of State double indented.

Title. From the day of his Birth he is commonly stiled the *Prince*, a Title in *England* given to no other Subject. The Title of *Prince of Wales* is ancient, and was first given by King

of England.

175

King *Edward I.* to his Eldest Son; for the *Welsh* Nation till that time unwilling to submit to the yoke of strangers, that King so ordered, that his Queen was delivered of her first Child in *Caernarvan Castle* in *Wales*, and then demanded of the *Welsh*, as some affirm, *If they would be content to subject themselves to one of their own Nation, that could not speak one word of English, and against whose life they could take no just exception.* Whereunto they readily consenting, the King nominated this his new-born Son, and afterwards created him *Prince of Wales*, and bestowed on him all the Lands, Honours, and Revenues belonging to the said Principality.

The Prince hath ever since been stiled *Prince of Wales*, *Duke of Aquitaine* and *Cornwall*, and *Earl of Chester* and *Flint*, which Earldoms are alwayes conferred upon him by his Patent since the Union of *England* and *Scotland*: his Title hath been

I 4 *Mag.*

176 The present State

Magna Britannia Princeps, but more ordinarily the Prince of *Wales*. As Eldest Son to the King of *Scotland* he is Duke of *Rothsay* and Seneschal of *Scotland* from his Birth.

The King of *Englands* Eldest Son (so long as *Normandy* remained in their hands) was always stiled Duke of *Normandy*.

Arms.

Antiently the Princes of *Wales* whilest they were Sovereigns, bare quarterly *Gules* and Or 4 *Lyons passant gardant* counterchanged.

The *Armes* of the Prince of *Wales* differ from those of the King only by addition of a *Label* of three Points, and the *Device* of the Prince is a *Coronet* beautified with three *Ostrich* Feathers, inscribed with *Ich dien*, which, in the German, or old Saxon Tongue is *I serve*, alluding perhaps to that in the *Gospel*, *The H. ir whilest his Father liveth differeth not from a Servant*. This *Device* was born at the Battel of *Cressy* by
John

of England.

John King of *Bohemia*, as serving there under the King of the French, and there slain by *Edward the Black Prince*, and since worn by the Princes of *Wales*, and by the *Vulgar* called the *Princes Armes*.

The Prince by our Law is reputed as the same Person with the King, and so declared by a Statute of *Henry 8*. *Coruscet enim Princeps* (say our Lawyers) *radiis Regis Patris sui & censetur una persona cum ipso*. And the Civilians say, the Kings Eldest Son may be stiled a King.

He hath certain Priviledges above other persons. Priviledges.

To imagine the death of the Prince, to violate the Wife of the Prince is made High-Treason.

Hath heretofore had priviledge of having a *Purveyor*, and taking *Purveyance* as the King.

To retain and qualifie as many *Chaplains* as he shall please.

178 **The present State**

To the Prince at the Age of 15 is due a certain *Aid* of Money from all the Kings Tenants and all that hold of him *in Capite*, by *Knights-Service*, and *Free Socage*, to make him a Knight.

Yet as the Prince in nature is a distinct Person from the King, so in Law also in some cases, He is a Subject, holdeth his Principalities and Seignories of the King, giveth the same respect to the King as other Subjects do.

Revenues The Revenues belonging to the Prince, since much of the Lands and Demesnes of that Dutchy have been aliened; are especially out of the *Tinn Mines* in *Cornwall*, which with all other profits of that Dutchy amount yearly to the sum of

The Revenues of the Principality of *Wales* surveyed 200 years ago was above 4680*l.* yearly, a rich Estate according to the value of Money in those days.

At

of England. 179

At present his whole Revenues may amount to

Till the Prince come to be 14 years old, all things belonging to the Principality of *Wales* were wont to be disposed of by Commissioners consisting of some principal Persons of the Clergy and Nobility.

The *Cadets*, or younger Sons of *Cadets*, *England*, are created, not born, Dukes or Earls of what Places or Titles the King pleaseth.

They have no certain *Appanages* as in *France*, but onely what the good pleasure of the King bestows upon them.

All the Kings Sons are *Consiliarii nati*, by Birth-right Counsellors of *State*, that so they may grow up in the weighty affairs of the Kingdom.

The Daughters of *England* are styled Princesses, the eldest of which hath an *Aid* or certain rate of Money paid by every Tenant *in Capite*,
Knight-

180 The present State

Knights Service, and *Socage*, towards her Dowry or Marriage Portion; and to violate her unmarried is High-Treason.

To all the Kings Children belong the Title of *Royal Highness*; All Subjects are to be uncovered in their presence, to kneel when they are admitted to *kiss* their hands, and at Table they are (*out of the Kings Presence*) served on the *Knee*.

The Children, the Brothers and Sisters of the King, if *Plaintiffs*, the summons in the Process need not have the solemnity of 15 dayes, as in case of other Subjects.

The *Natural*, or *Illegitimate* Sons and Daughters of the King, after they are acknowledged by the King, have had here as in *France*, precedence of all the Nobles under those of the Blood-Royal.

They bear what Surname the King pleaseth to give them, and for Arms the Arms of *England*, with a *Baſton* or a *Border Gobionne*, or some

of England.

181

some other mark of illegitimation. Some Kings of *England* have acknowledged many, and had more illegitimate Sons and Daughters.

King *Henry the First* had no fewer than sixteen illegitimate Children.

Henry the Eighth amongst others had one by *Elizabeth Blount*, named *Henry Fitzroy*, created by him Duke of *Somerset* and *Richmond*, Earl of *Nottingham*, and Lord High Admiral of *England*, *Ireland*, and *Aquitain*.

CHAP

CHAP. VIII.

Of the present KING of ENGLAND, and therein of His Name, Surname, Genealogy, Birth, Baptisme, Court, Education, Restauration, Marriage, &c.

Name. THE KING now reigning is CHARLES the Second of that Name. His Name of Baptisme Charles in the German Tongue signifies one of a Masculine strength or vertue.

Surname. The Royal, and also the most Princely and Antient Families of Europe, at this day have properly no Surnames, for neither is Bourbon the Surname, but the Title of the Royal Family of France, nor Austria of Spain, nor Stuart of England, since the coming in of King James, nor Theodore or Tudor for his

his 5 immediate Ancestors in England, nor Plantagenet for 11 Generations before, as some vainly think, for although Geffery Duke of Anjou was surnamed Plantagenet from a Broom Stalke commonly worn in his Bonnet, yet his Son Hen. 2. King of England, was surnamed Fitz-Empress, and his Son Richard Cœur de Lyon: So Owen Grandfather to King Henry 7. was ap Meredith, and he ap Theobore, pronounc'd Tyder, Surnames being then but little in use amongst the Cambrobritans; So Walter Father to Robert King of Scotland, from whom our present King is descended, was only by Office Grand Seneschal or High Steward or Stuart of Scotland, though of later times by a long vulgar error it hath so prevailed, that they are accounted Surnames of many Families descended from him.

Steward is a Contraction from the Saxon word Stedeward, that is in Latine *Locum-tenens*, in French *Lieu-tenant*; because the Lord High

184 The present State

High Steward was *Regis locum tenens*, a Name not unfit for any King, who is *Dei locum tenens*, Gods Stuart or Lieutenant or Vicegerent upon Earth.

Genealogy.

The King now reigning is Son to King *Charles* the Martyr and the Princess *Henrietta Maria*, Daughter of King *Henry* the Great of *France*; from which two Royal Stocks he hath in his Veins all the Royal Blood of *Europe* concentred.

Is descended lineally and lawfully from the *British, Saxon, Danish, Norman,* and *Scottish Kings* and Princes of this Island.

From the first *Brittish Kings* the 139th Monarch, from the *Scottish* in a continued succession for almost 2000 years the 109th, from the *Saxon* the 46th, and from the first of the *Norman Line* the 26th King. So that for Royal Extraction and long Line of just descent, His Majesty now reigning excels all the Monarchs of all the Christian

of England. 185

Christian, if not of the whole World.

Is the first Prince of *Great Britain* so born, and hath in possession larger Dominions than any of his Ancestors.

He was born the 29th of May Birth. 1630. at the Royal Palace of *St. James*, over which House the same day at Noon was by thousands seen a star, and soon after the Sun suffered an Eclipse, a sad presage as some then divined, that this Prince's Power should for some time be eclipsed, as it hath been; and some subject signified by a star, should have extraordinary splendor.

Was Christened the 27th of June Baptism. following by the then Bishop of *London* Doctor *Land*.

Had for Godfathers his two Uncles *Lewis* the 13th King of *France*, and *Frederick* Prince *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, then called King of *Bohemia*, represented by the Duke of *Richmond*

186 The present State

Richmond and Marquis *Hamilton*; his Godmother being his Grandmother then Queenmother of *France*, represented by the Dutchess of *Richmond*.

Had for Governess *Mary Countess of Dorset*, Wife to *Edward Earl of Dorset*. In *May 1638*. he was first knighted, and immediately after he was made Knight of the Garter, and installed at *Windsor*.

Court.

About this time by Order, not Creation, he was first called Prince of *Wales*, and had all the profits of that Principality, and divers other lands annexed, and Earldom of *Chester* granted unto him; and held his Court apart from the King.

Educator.

At the Age of Eight he had for Governour the Earl afterwards Marquis and now Duke of *Newcastle*, and after him the late Earl of *Berkshire*: and for Tutor or Preceptor, Doctor *Dunne* then Dean of *Christ*

of England.

Christchurch, after Bishop of *Salisbury*, and lately of *Winchester*.

At the Age of 12 was with the King his Father at the Battle of *Edgehill*, and soon after at *Oxford* was committed to the care of the Marquis of *Hertford*.

About 14 years old was in the Head of an Army in the West of *England*.

At the Age of 15 a Marriage was proposed between him and the Eldest Daughter of the King of *Portugal*, the *Infanta Joanna* since deceased.

Two years after was from *Cornwall* transported to the *Ile of Scilly*, and after to *Fersey*, and thence to his Royal Mother to *St. Germain* near *Paris*.

In 1648 was at Sea with some Naval Forces, endeavouring to rescue the King his Father, then in the *Ile of Wight*, out of the wicked hands of his rebellious Subjects. Not many moneths after, upon the sad news of the horrid Murder of his

188 **The present State**

his Royal Father, he was in *Holland* first saluted *King*, and soon after proclaimed in *Scotland*, being not yet 19 years of age.

At the age of 20 from *Holland* he landed in *Scotland*, *June* 1650, and in *January* following was crowned at *Scoon*.

The 3d of *September* 1651 fought the Battle of *Worcester*, whence after the unfortunate loss of his whole Army, wandering in disguise about *England* for *Six Weeks*, and most wonderfully preserved, he was at length transported from a Creek near *Shoram* in *Sussex* to *Feccam* near *Havre de Grace* in *France*; in which Kingdom, with his Royal Brothers and divers English Nobility, Clergy, and Gentry, he was for some years received and treated as King of *England*, and by his mediations and interest with the Prince of *Conde* and Duke of *Lorrain*, then in the Head of two great and mighty Armies against the *French* King, quenched the then newly
kindled

of England.

189

kindled fires of a great and universal rebellion against him, much resembling that of *England*; and was a means of recalling the then fled and banished Cardinal *Mazarine*: After which in *Germany*, *Flanders*, *Spain*, &c. he passed the residue of his time in the Studies and Exercises most befitting a Prince, in soliciting the Aid of Christian Princes, and in advising and vigorously promoting the several attempts of his Friends in *England*, until the year 1660, at which time being at *Brussels* within the *Spanish Territories*, and perceiving a general inclination and disposition of all *England* to receive him, he providently removed himself to *Breda*, within the Dominions of the *United Netherlands*, in the month of *April*, thence in *May* to the *Hague*, from whence, after a magnificent Entertainment and an humble Invitation by English Commissioners sent from the then Convention at *Westminster*, he embarked at *Scheveling* the 23 of *May* 1660.
and

and with a gallant English Fleet and a gentle gale of Wind, landed the 25th at *Dover*, and on the 29th following, being his Birth-day, and then just 30 years of age, he entred into *London*, was there received with the greatest and most univerfal Joy, Acclamations, and Magnificence that could possibly be expressed on so short a warning.

On the first of *June* following, His Majesty sat in *Parliament*, and on the 22 of *April* 1661. rode in triumph from the *Tower* to *Westminster*, on the next day, being *St. Georges*, was crowned with great Ceremony.

Marriage.

On the 28th of *May* following, declared to his Parliament his Resolution to marry the *Infant* of *Portugal*, who accordingly in *May* 1662, being landed at *Portsmouth*, was there espoused to the King by the then *Bishop* of *London*, now *Archbishop* of *Canterbury*.

His

His Majesties life hath been full of wonders, but three passages especially seem miraculous. First, at his Birth a Bright Star seen over him at Noon-day by many thousands. Secondly, His escape in and after the Battel of *Worcester*, when being in the very heart of *England*, forsaken by all, a sum of Money by Publick Act promised to those that should discover him, and penalty of High Treason to any one that should conceal him; when he was seen and known to many persons, of all sorts and conditions; whereof divers were very indigent, and so very subject to be tempted with the proposed reward, and divers of the female sex, and so most unapt to retain a secret, when he was necessitated to wait so many weeks, and appear in so many places and companies, before a fit opportunity of transportation could be found. Thirdly, His Majesty's Restauration (*quippe impossibile fuit filium tot Precationum,*

cationum, tot Lacrymarum, & tot Miraculorum periisse) that after so many years dispossession, his most inveterate, potent, subtil enemies in full and quiet possession, on a sudden the desire of him should like Lightning, or a mighty Torrent, run over all *England* in such a manner, that he should be solemnly invited, magnificently conducted, triumphantly received, without Blood, Blows, Bargain, or any Obligation to any Foreign Prince or Potentate.

This was the Lords doing, and must for ever be marvellous in our eyes.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Of the present QUEEN of ENGLAND.

DONNA CATHERINA *Infanta of Portugal* being Queen Consort of *England*, and the Second Person in the Kingdom, was Daughter of Don *Juan* the fourth of that Name, King of *Portugal*, descended from our English *John* of *Gauze*, Duke of *Lancaster* and King of *Castille*, and *Leon* Fourth Son of *Edward* the third King of *England*, and of *Donna Lucia* Daughter of *Don Guzman el bueno* a Spaniard, Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, who was lineally descended from *Ferdinando de la Cerde* and his Consort *Blanche*; to whom *St. Lewis* King of *France* her Father relinquishd his Right and Title to *Spain*, descended to him by his Mother *Blanche*, eldest Daugh-

K ter

ter and Heir of *Alphonso* the Spanish King.

She was born the 14th of November 1638. at *Villa Vicoſa* in Portugal, ſhe was baptized *Catherina*, ſignifying in Greek *Pure*, her Father being then Duke of *Braganza* (though right Heir of the Crown of Portugal) the moſt potent Subject in Europe, for a third part of Portugal was then holden of him in Vaſſalage; and is only Siſter at preſent of Don *Alphonſo* the Sixth of that Name, and 23 King of Portugal 1643.

Hath one Brother more called Don *Pedro*, born 1648.

Had another Brother called Don *Theodoſio*, the eldeſt Son of that King, who was the moſt gallant and hopeful Prince of all Europe, but died 1653, aged but 18 years, yet his life thought worthy to be written by divers grave Authors of Portugal.

Having been moſt carefully and piously educated by her Mother, and

at

at the age of 22 deſired in Marriage by King *CHARLES* the Second, and the Marriage not long after concluded by the Negotiation of Don *Franciſco de Melo* Conde *Ponte Marquis de Sande*, and then Extraordinary Ambaſſadour of the King of Portugal, and ſolemnized at *Lisbon*. She embarkt for England upon the 23d of April 1662. being the Feſtival of *St. George*, Patron as well of Portugal as England, and was ſafely by the Earl of *Sandwich* conducted by a Squadron of Ships to *Portſmouth*; where the King firſt met her, and was re-married.

On the 23d of *Auguſt* 1662 her Majeſty coming by water from *Hampton Court*, was with great Pomp and Magnificence firſt received by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of *London* at *Chelſey*, and thence conducted by water to *Whitehall*.

The Portion ſhe brought with her was Eight hundred Millions of

K 2

Reals

196 **The present State**

Rea's or two Millions of *Crusado's*, being about Three hundred thousand pounds *Sterling*; together with that important place of *Tangier* upon the Coast of *Africk*, and the Isle of *Bombaim* near *Goa* in the *East-Indies*, with a Priviledge that any Subjects of the King of *England* may Trade freely in the *East* and *West-Indie*-Plantations belonging to the *Portugueses*.

Her Majesties *Joynture* by the Articles of Marriage is Thirty thousand pounds *Sterling per annum*, and the King out of his great affection toward her, hath as an addition settled upon her 10000*l. per annum* more.

The Queens Arms as Daughter of *Portugal*, is *Argent* 5 *Scutcheons Azure crosse-wise*, each *Scutcheon* charged with 5 *Plates Argent Salter-wise*, with a Point *Sable*, the Border *Gules*, charged with 7 *Castles Or*. This Coat was first worn by the Kings of *Portugal*, in memory of a Signal Battel obtained by

of **England.**

197

by the first King of *Portugal* *Don Alphonso* against 5 Kings of the *Moors*, before which Battel appeared *Christ crucified* in the Air, and a Voice heard, as once to *Constantine the Great*, *In hoc signo vinces*: before which time the *Portugal* Arms were *Argent a Cross Azure*.

Queen *CATHERINE* is a Personage of such rare perfections of Mind and Body, of such eminent Piety, Modesty, and other Vertues, that the English Nation may yet promise all the happiness they are capable of from a Succession of Princes to govern them to the end of the World.

CHAP. X.

Of the Queen Mother.

THE Third Person in the Kingdom was the *Queen-Mother*, or *Dowager*, *Henrietta Maria de Bourbon*, Daughter to the Great King

K 3

198 **The present State**

King *Henry* the Fourth, Sister to the first King *Lewis* the 13th, Wife to the glorious *Martyr* King *Charles* the First, Mother to our *Gracious* Sovereign King *Charles* the Second, and Aunt to the present *Puissant* King *Lewis* the 14th.

She was born the 16th of *November* 1609, married first at *Noſtre Dame* in *Paris* by Proxy 1625, and shortly after in the moneth of *June* arriving at *Dover*, was at *Canterbury* espoused to King *Charles* the First. In the year 1629 was delivered of her first born, a Son that died shortly after; in 1630 of her Second, our present Sovereign whom God long preserve; in 1631, of her Third, *Mary*, the late Princess of *Orange*, a Lady of admirable *Vertues*, who had the happiness to see the King her Brother restored 6 or 7 moneths before her death. In 1633 of her Fourth, *James*, now Duke of *York*. In 1635 of her Fifth, named *Elizabeth*, who being a Princess of incomparable abilities and *Vertues*,

of England.

199

tues, died for grief soon after the murder of her Father. In 1636 of her Sixth, named *Anna*, who died young. In the year 1640 of her Seventh Child, *Henry* of *Oatlands*, designed Duke of *Gloceſter*, who living till above 20, being most excellently accomplished in all Princely Endowments, died four moneths after the Restoration of the King. In the year 1644 of her Eighth, the Lady *Henrietta*, now Dutcheſs of *Orleans*.

In the year 1641, Her Majesty fore-seeing the ensuing storm of *Rebellion*, and seeing the groundless *Odium* raised already against her self, timely withdrew her self with her eldest Daughter (then newly married to Prince *William*, onely Son to *Henry* Prince of *Orange*) into *Holland*, whence in 1643, after a most furious storm and barbarous fierce pursuit of the English Rebels at Sea, she landed at *Burlington Bay* with Men, Money, and Ammunition, and soon after with a considerable

K 4. rable

able Army met the King at *Edgehill*, and thence was conducted to *Oxford*.

In *April* 1644, marching with competent forces from *Oxford* towards *Exeter*, at *Abington* took her last farewell of the King, whom she never saw again.

In *July* following embarkt at *Pendennis* Castle, she sailed into *France*, where entertained at the Charges of her Nephew the present King of *France*, she passed a solitary retired life until the moneth of *October* 1660 when upon the Restauration of her Son to the Crown of *England*, she came to *London*, and having settled her Revenues here, she went again with her youngest Daughter the Lady *Henrietta* into *France*, to see her espoused to the then Duke of *Anjou*, now of *Orleans*; and in the moneth *July* 1662, being returned into *England*, she settled her Court at *Somerset-House*, where she continued till *May* 1665, then crossed the Seas again, and hath
ever

ever since continued in *France* her Native Countrey, till her death.

She needeth no other Character then what is found in the Seventh Chapter of that inimitable Book compiled by him that knew her best.

CHAP. XI.

Of the present Princes and Princesses of the Blood.

THE first Prince of the Blood (in *France* called *Monsieur sans queue*) is the Most Illustrious Prince *James* Duke of *York*, Second Son to King *Charles* the *Martyr*, and only Brother to the present King our Sovereign.

He was born *October* 14. 1633. and forthwith proclaimed at the Court Gates Duke of *York*, the 24th of the same month was baptized, and afterward committed to the Government

vernment of the then Countess of Dorset.

The 27 of July 1643, at Oxford was created by Letters Patent Duke of York (though called so by special command from his Birth) without those Solemnities (the iniquity of the times not admitting thereof) that were used to the King his Father 1605, when being Second Son to King James, and so Duke of Albany in Scotland, was created Duke of York with the preceding Solemn Creation of divers young Noblemen to be Knights of the Bath, and the Robes of State put upon him, the Cap of State on his Head, and the Golden Rod into his Hand, the Prime Nobility and the Heralds assisting at that Ceremony.

After the Surrender of Oxford, his Royal Highness was in 1646, conveyed to London by the then prevailing disloyal part of the Two Houses of Parliament, and committed with his Brother Gloucester and Sister Elizabeth to the care of the Earl of Northumberland. In

In 1648, aged about 15, was by Colonel Bampfild conveyed in a disguise or habit of a Girl beyond Sea, first to his Sister the Princess Royal of Orange in Holland, and afterward to the Queen his Mother, then at Paris, where he was carefully educated in the Religion of the Church of England, and in all Exercises meet for such a Prince.

About the Age of 20. in France he went into the Campagne, and served with much Gallantry under that great Commander the then Protestant Mareschal de Turenne for the French King against the Spanish forces in Flanders.

Notwithstanding which, upon a Treaty between the French King and Cromwel in 1655, being obliged with all his retinue to leave the French Dominions, and invited into Flanders by Don Juan of Austria, he there served under him against the French King, then leagued with the English Rebels against Spain: where his Magnanimity and

and *Dexterity in Martial affairs*, (though unsuccessful) were very eminent.

In the year 1660 came over with the King into *England*, and being Lord High Admiral, in the year 1665, in the War against the *United States of the Neatherlands*, commanded in person the whole *Royal Navy* on the Seas between *England* and *Holland*, where with incomparable valour and extraordinary hazard of his own Royal Person, after a most sharp dispute he obtained a *Signal Victory* over the whole *Dutch Fleet* commanded by *Admiral Opdam*, who perisht with his own and many more *Dutch Ships* in that Fight.

He married *Anne* the Eldest Daughter of *Edward Earl of Clarendon*, late Lord High Chancellour of *England*, by whom he hath had a numerous issue, whereof are living first the *Lady Mary*, born 30 April 1662, whose Godfather was *Prince Rupert*, and Godmothers the *Duchesses of Buckingham* and *Ormond*.

Secondly,

Secondly, the *Lady Anne*, born in Febr. 1664. whose Godfather was *Gilbert Lord Archbishop of Canterbury*, her Godmothers were the young *Lady Mary* her Sister and the *Duchess of Monmouth*. She is lately for her health transported into *France*. Thirdly, 15 Sept. 1667, was born *Edgar*, lately created Duke of *Cambridge* by *Letters Patent* under the Great Seal of *England*, whose Godfathers were the Duke of *Albermarle* and the Marquis of *Worcester*. His Godmother the Countess of *Suffolk*.

The Titles of his Royal Highness, The *Duke of York and Albany*, *Earl of Ulster*, *Lord High Admiral of England, Ireland, and all Foreign Plantations*, *Constable of Dover-Castle*, *Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports*, *Governour of Portsmouth*, &c.

of

Of the Prince of Orange.

Next to the Duke of York and his Issue, is *William of Nassau* Prince of *Orange*, onely Issue of the lately deceased Princess Royal *Mary*, eldest Daughter to King *Charles* the First, and wedded 1641, to *William of Nassau*, the only Son to *Henry* Prince of *Orange*, Commander in Chief of all the Forces of the States General both by Land and by Sea.

His Highness the present Prince was born 9 days after his Fathers death on the 14th *Novemb.* 1650, had for Godfathers the Lords *States General* of *Holland* and *Zealand*, and the Cities of *Delft*, *Leyden*, and *Amsterdam*.

His Governess was the English Lady *Stanhop*, then Wife to the Heer *Van Hemvliet*.

At Eight years of age was sent to the *University* of *Leyden*.

His

His yearly Revenue is about 60000 *l. Sterling*, besides Military advantages enjoyed by his Father and Ancestors, which amounted yearly to about 30000 *l. Sterling* more.

He is a Prince in whom the high and Princely qualities of his Ancestors already appear.

Of the Princess Henrietta.

The next Heir (after the fore-named) to the English Crown, is the *Princess Henrietta*, only Sister living to the present King of *England*.

She was born the 16th day of *June* 1644 at *Exeter* during the heat of the late Rebellion, after the surrender of *Exeter* conveyed to *Oxford*, and thence 1646, to *London*, whence with her Governess the Lady *Dalkeith*, she escaped into *France*, was there educated as became her high Birth and Quality, but

but being left wholly to the care and maintenance of the *Queen her Mother* at *Paris*, embraced the *Romish Religion*.

At the age of 16 years came with the *Queen Mother* into *England*, and 6 months after returning into *France*, was Married to the only Brother of the French King the Illustrious Prince *Philip* then *Duke of Anjou*, till the death of his Uncle, and now *Duke of Orleans*, whose Revenue is 1100000 *Livers Tournois*, besides his *Appanage*, not yet settled.

Her Portion was 40000 *l. Sterling*, her Joynture to be the same with the present *Dutchess Dowager of Orleans*.

This Princess hath issue one Daughter, if she hath a Son the French King allows him 50000 *Crowns* yearly, and the *Appanage* after the death of the present Duke reverts to the Crown.

of

Of the Prince Elector Palatine.

There being left alive no more of the Offspring of King *Charles the First*, the next Heirs of the Crown of *England* are the Issue and Descendants of *Elizabeth* late *Queen of Bohemia*, only Sister to the said King, who was married to *Frederick* Prince *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, afterwards stiled King of *Bohemia*, whose eldest son living is *Charles Lodowick* Prince *Electo*r *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, commonly called the *Palsgrave*, from the High Dutch *Paltzgraff*, *Palatii Comes*, was born the 22d. of *Decemb.* 1617, at *Heydelberg*, and afterwards at the age of 3 or 4 years, conveyed thence into the Countries of *Wittenberg* and *Brandenburg*, then into *Holland*, and at the *Hague*, and the University of *Leyden*, was educated in a Princely manner. At the age of 18 years came into *England*, was made

made *Knight* of the *Garter*, about two years after fought a Battel at *Lemgou*, in *Westphalia*. In the year 1637, passing *incognito* thorow *France* to take possession of *Brisach* upon the *Rhine*, which the Duke of *Saxon Weymar* intended to deliver up unto him, together with the Command of his Army, he was by that quick-sighted *Cardinal Rich-lieu* discovered at *Moulins*, and thence sent back prisoner to the *Bois de Vincennes*, whence after 23 weeks imprisonment he was by the mediation of the King of *England* set at liberty.

In the year 1643, he came again into *England*, and with the Kings *secret consent* (because the King could not continue unto him the wonted Pension, whilst the Rebels possess the greatest part of his Majesties Revenues) made his Addresses to, and abode with the disloyal part of the Lords and Commons at *Westminster*, until the Murder of the said King, and the Restauration of the

the *Lower Palatinat*, according to the famous *Treaty at Munster*, for which he was constrained to quit all his right to the *Upper Palatinat*, and accept of an *Eighth Electorship*, at a juncture of time when the King of *England* (had he not been engaged at home by an impious Rebellion) had been the most considerable of all other at that Treaty, and this Prince his *Nephew* would have had the greatest advantages there.

In 1650, he espoused the Lady *Charlotte*, at *Cassel*, Daughter to *William 5th Landgrave of Hesse*, and of *Elizabeth Emilia of Hannam*, by whom he hath one Son named *Charles*, born 31 of *March* 1651, and one Daughter named *Louise*, born in *May* 1652.

of

Of Prince Rupert.

Next to the Issue of the Prince Elector Palatine, is Prince Rupert, born at Prague 17 Decem. 1619, not long before that very unfortunate Battel there fought, whereby not only all *Bohemia* was lost, but the *Palatine Family* was for almost 30 years dispossess'd of all their Possessions in *Germany*.

At 13 years of age he Marcht with the then Prince of *Orange* to the Siege of *Rhineberg*; afterwards in *England* was made *Knight* of the *Garter*.

At the age of 18 he commanded a *Regiment* of *Horse* in the *German Wars*. and in the Battel of *Lemgon* 1638, being taken by the *Imperialists* under the Command of Count *Hatzfeld*, he continued a Prisoner above three years.

In 1642, returning into *England*, and made General of the *Horse* to the King, fights and defeats Colonel *Sands* near *Worcester*, routed the Rebels *Horse* at *Edge-Hill*, took *Cirencester*, raised the Siege of *Newark*, recovered *Lichfield* and *Bristol*, raised the long siege before *Latham House*, fought the great Battel at *Marston Moor*, was created *Earl* of *Holderness*, and *Duke* of *Cumberland*, after the extinction of the Male Line of the *Cliffords* 1643. Finally the Kings forces at land being totally defeated, he transported himself into *France*, and was afterward made *Admiral* of such Ships of War as submitted to King *Charles* the Second, to whom after divers disasters at Sea, and wonderful preservations, he returned to *Paris* 1652, where, and in *Germany*, sometimes at the *Emperours Court*, and sometimes at *Heydelberg*; he passed his time in Princely studies and exercises, till the Restoration of His Majesty now raigning; after which, returning

ing into *England*, was made a *Privy Counsellour* in 1662, and in 1666, being joyned *Admiral* with the Duke of *Albermarle*, first attackt the whole *Dutch Fleet* with his *Squadron*, in such a bold-resolute way, that he put the Enemy soon to flight.

He enjoys a *Pension* from His Majesty of 4000 *l. per Annum*, and the Government of the Castle of *Windsor*.

After Prince *Rupert*, the next Heirs to the Crown of *England* are 3 *French Ladies*, daughters of Prince *Edward* lately deceased, who was a younger Son of the Queen of *Bohemia*, whose Widow the Princess *Dowager*, Mother to the said three Ladies, is Sister to the late Queen of *Poland*, Daughter and Coheir to the last Duke of *Nevers* in *France*, amongst which three Daughters there is a Revenue of about 12000 *l. Sterling* a year.

The

The Eldest of these is married to the Duke d' *Enguien* Eldest Son to the Prince of *Conde*. The Second is married to *John Frederick* Duke of *Brunswick* and *Lunenbourg* at *Hanover*.

After those is the Princess *Elizabeth*, Eldest Sister living to the Prince *Electer Palatin*, born 26 *Decemb.* 1618. unmarried and living in *Germany*, is *Abbesse* of *Herzorden*, but of the Protestant Religion.

The next is another Sister, called the Princess *Louisa*, bred up at the *Hague* with the Queen her Mother in the Religion of the Church of *England*, at length embracing the *Romish Religion*, is now Lady *Abbesse* of *Maubuisson* at *Ponthoise*, not far from *Paris*.

Last of all is the Princess *Sophia*, youngest Daughter to the Queen of *Bohemia*, born at the *Hague*, 13 *Octob.* 1630. and in 1658. wedded
to

to Ernest Auguste Duke of Brunswick and Lunenburg, Bishop of Osnaburg, by whom she hath had divers Children.

Of these three Princesses it is said, that the first is the most learned, the second the greatest Artist, and the last one of the most accomplisht Ladies in Europe.

CHAP. XII.

Of the Great Officers of the Crown.

Next to the King and Princesses of the Blood are reckoned the Great Officers of the Crown; whereof there are Nine, viz. the Lord High Steward of England, the Lord High Chancellor, the Lord High Treasurer, Lord President of the Kings Council, the Lord Privy Seal, the Lord Great Chamberlain, the Lord High Constable, the Earl Marshal, and the Lord High Admiral.

First,

The first Great Officer of the High Crown, according to the account of our Ancestors, was the Lord High Steward of England, or Viceroy; for so the word Steward imports in the Saxon Tongue, from *Stede* and *ward Locum tenens*; in French *Lieutenant*; and was the same Officer with the *Reichs Drotzet*, that is, *Regni vice Rex* in Sweden, and the *Stadtholder* in Denmark, who is also called *Viceroy* or *Lieutenant du Roy*. Our Common Lawyers stile him *Magnus Angliæ Seneschallus*, of *Sen* in Saxon *Justice*, and *Schals* a *Gouverneur* or Officer.

He was antiently the Highest Officer under the King, and his power so exorbitant, that it was thought fit not longer to trust it in the hands of any Subject, for his Office was *Supervidere & regulare sub Rege & immediate post Regem* (as an antient Record speaks) *totum Regnum Angliæ & omnes ministros Legum infra idem regnum temporibus pacis & guerrarum.* L The

218 **The present State**

The last that had a State of Inheritance in this High Office, was *Henry of Bullinbrook* (Son and Heir to the great Duke of *Lancaster*; *John of Gaunt*, afterwards King of *England*) since which time they have been made only *pro hac vice*, to officiate either at a Coronation, by vertue of which Office he sitteth judicially and keepeth his Court in the Kings Palace at *Westminster* and there receiveth the Bills and Petitions of all such Noblemen and others, who by reason of their Tenure, or otherwise, claim to do Services at the New Kings Coronation, and to receive the Fees and Allowances due and accustomed; as lately at the Coronation of King *Charles the Second*, the *Duke of Ormond* was made for that occasion Lord *High Steward of England*, and (marching immediately before the King, above all other Officers of the Crown) bore in his hands *St. Edwards Crown*: Or else for the Arraignment of some Peer of the Realm,

of England.

219

Realm, their Wives or Widows, for Treason or Felony, or some other great Crime, to judge and give Sentence, as the ancient High Stewards were wont to do; which ended, his Commission expireth: During such Trial he sitteth under a Cloth of Estate, and they that speak to him say, *May it please your Grace my Lord High Steward of England*. His Commission is to proceed *Secundum Legem & consuetudinem Angliae*. He is sole Judge, yet doth call all the Twelve Judges of the Land to assist him. Is not sworn, nor the Lords who are the Triers of the Peer arraigned.

During his Stewardship he bears a *White Staffe* in his Hand, and the Trial being over, openly breaks it, and so his Office takes an end.

Next, The Lord *High Chancellour*, Lord *Summus Cancellarius*, so called, *Chancellor*, because all *Patents*, *Commissions*, *Warrants*, coming from the King,

L 2 and

220 The present State

and perused by him, are signed, if well, or cancelled, if amiss.

Dignity. He is after the King and Princes of the Blood in *Civil Affairs* (there being now no Lord *High Steward*) the highest Person in the Kingdom, as the *Arch-bishop of Canterbury* is in *Ecclesiastical Affairs*.

Office. His *Office* is to keep the Kings *Great Seal*, to judge, not according to the *Common Law*, as other Civil Courts do, but to moderate the rigor of the Law, and to judge according to *Equity*, *Conscience*, or *Reason*.

Oath. His *Oath* is to do right to all manner of People poor and rich, after the *Laws* and *Customs* of the Realm, and truly counsel the King, to keep secret the Kings Counsel, nor suffer so far as he may, that the Rights of the Crown be diminished, &c.

From the time of *Henry 2.* the Chancellours of *England* have been ordinarily

of England.

221

ordinarily made of *Bishops*, or other *Clergy-men*, learned in the *Civil Laws*, till *Henry 8.* made Chancellour first *Sir Thomas More*, and after him *Thomas Audley*. After whom also was made Lord Chancellour *Sir Richard Rich* Knight, Lord *Rich* (a *Common Lawyer*) who had been first the said Kings *Sollicitor*, and afterwards Chancellour of his Court of *Augmentation*, from whom is descended the present Earl of *Warwick*, and the Earl of *Holland*; since which time there have been some *Bishops*, but most *Common Lawyers*.

This High Office is in *France* *durante vita*, but here, is *durante beneplacito Regis*.

The Salary from the King is 848 *Salary*. *l. per Annum*, and when the *Star-Chamber* was up, 200 *l. per Annum* more for his Attendance there.

The Lord Chancellour or Lord *Creation* Keeper (who differ only in Name) is created *per traditionem magni Siggilli*

L 3 gilli

gilli sibi per dominum Regem, and by taking his Oath.

The Great Seal being lately taken from *Edward Earl of Clarendon* Lord Chancellor, was by His Majesties great favour bestowed upon *Sir Orlando Bridgman*, with the Title of Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of *England*.

Lord
Treasurer.

The Third Great Officer of the Crown is the Lord High Treasurer of *England*, who receives this high Office by delivery of a *White Staffe* to him by the King, and holds it *durante beneplacito Regis*.

Anciently he received this Dignity by the delivery of the *Golden Keys* of the *Treasury*.

Oath.

His *Oath* is little different from that of the Lord Chancellor.

Office.

He is *Præfectus Aerarii*, a Lord by his Office, under whose Charge and Government is all the Kings Revenue kept in the *Exchequer*. He hath also the check of all the Officers any

any way employed in collecting *Imposts, Customs, Tributes*, or other Revenues belonging to the *Crown*. He hath the gift of all *Customs, Controllers*, and *Searchers* in all the *Ports* of *England*.

He hath the nomination of the *Escheators* in every County, and in some Cases by Statute is to appoint a *Measurer* for the length and breadth of *Clothes*.

He, with others joyned in Commission with him, or without, letteth Leases of all the Lands belonging to the *Crown*. He giveth *Warrants* to certain Persons of Quality to have their *Wine* Custom-free.

The Annual Salary of the Lord High Treasurer is in all 383 *l. 7s. 8d. per Annum*. Since the decease of *Thomas Wriothesly* last Earl of *Southampton*, and last Lord High Treasurer of *England*, this Office hath been executed by a Commission granted to three eminent Persons, viz: the Lord *Ashley*, *Sir Thomas Clifford*, and *Sir John Duncomb*. L 4 The

Lord
Presi-
dent.

The Fourth *Great Officer* named in the Statute 31 Hen 8. is the Lord *President* of the Kings Privy Council, an Officer as antient as King *John's* time, was usually called *Com-
siliarius Capitalis*. His Office is to attend upon the King, to propose business at Council-Table, and then to report to the King the several Transactions there. It hath been alwayes granted by Letters Patents under the Kings Great Seal *durante beneplacito*. This Office of later times is grown obsolete, the last that had this honour, was the late Earl of *Manchester*. Now the Lord *Keeper* usually supplies his place.

Lord
Privy
Seal.

The Fifth the Lord *Privy Seal*, who is a Lord by his Office, under whose hands pass all Charters and *Grants* of the King, and *Pardons* signed by the King, before they come to the *Great Seal of England*; also divers other matters of leis con-
cernment,

cernment, as for payments of mony, &c. which do not pass the Great Seal.

He is by his Place of the Kings *Privy-Council*, and Chief Judge of the *Court of Requests*, when it shall be re-continued; and besides his Oath of Privy Counsellour, takes a particular Oath as Lord *Privy Seal*.

His Salary is 1500 *l. per Annum*.

His Place according to Statute is next to the Lord *President* of the *Kings Council*.

It is an Office of great Trust and *Dignity*. Skill, that he put not this Seal to any Grant without good Warrant under the Kings *Privy Signet*; nor with Warrant, if it be against Law or Custom, until that the King be first acquainted.

This great Officer is mentioned in the Statutes of 2 *Rich. 2.* and then ranked amongst the Chief Persons of the Realm.

And is at present enjoyed by
John Lord Roberts, Baron Roberts of
L 5 *Truro,*

Truro, at present Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and executed by Commissioners under him; who are Sir *Edward Deering*, Sir *Thomas Strickland*, and *Robert Milward* Esquire.

Chamberlain.

The Sixth Great Officer of the Crown is the Lord Great Chamberlain of *England*, an Officer of great Antiquity, to whom belongs *Livery* and *Lodging* in the Kings Court, and certain Fees due from each *Archbishop* and *Bishop* when they do their *Homage* or *Fealty* to the King, and from all *Peers* of the Realm at their *Creation*, or doing the *Homage* or *Fealty*, and at the *Coronation* of any King to have 40 Ells of *Crimson Velvet* for his own Robes, and on the *Coronation* day before the King riseth, to bring his *Shirt*, *Coyse*, *Wearing Clothes*, and after the King is by him apparalled and gone forth, to have his *Bed* and all *Furniture* of his *Bed-Chamber* for his Fees, all the Kings *Night Apparel*, and to carry at the *Coronation* the *Coyse*, *Gloves*, and

and *Linnen* to be used by the King upon that occasion; also the *Sword* and *Scabbard*, and the *Gold* to be offered by the King, and the *Robe Royal* and *Crown*, and to undress and attire the King with his *Robes Royal*, and to serve the King that day before and after *Dinner* with *Water* to wash his hands; and to have the *Basin* and *Towels* for his Fees, &c.

This Honour was long enjoyed by the Earls of *Oxford*, from the time of *Hen. 1.* by an *Estate Tayle* or *Inheritance*, but in the two last *Coronations* by the Earls of *Lindsey*, and that by an *Estate* of *Inheritance* from a *Daughter* or *Heir General* claimed and controverted.

The Seventh Great Officer is the Constable Lord High Constable of *England*, so called some think from the Saxon *Cuning*, by contraction King and Stable, *quasi Regis columen*, for it was antiently written *Cuninstable*, but rather from *Comes Stabuli*, whose

whose Power and Jurisdiction was anciently so great, that after the death of *Edward Bohun Duke of Buckingham* 1521, the last *High-Constable* of *England*, it was thought too great for any Subject.

But since, upon occasion of Coronations (as at that of King *Charles 2.* was made the late Earl of *Northumberland*) and at Solemn Trials by Combat (as at that which was intended between *Key* and *Ramsay*, 1631, was made *Robert* Earl of *Lindsey*) there is created *pro hac vice* a Lord *High Constable*. His Power and Jurisdiction is the same with the *Earl Marshal*, with whom he sits Judge in the *Marshals Court*, and takes place of the *Earl Marshal*.

Earl
Marshal.

The Eighth Great Officer of the Crown is the *Earl Marshal* of *England*, so called from *Mare* in the old Saxon (*i.e.*) *Horses*; and *Schal*, *Præfectus*. He is an Earl, some say, by his Office, whereby he taketh as the *Constable* doth, Cognifance of all matters

matters of *War* and *Arms*, determineth *Contracts* touching Deeds of *Arms* out of the *Realm* upon *Land*, and matters concerning *Wars* within the *Realm*, which cannot be determined by *Common Law*.

This Office is of great Antiquity in *England*, and anciently of great Power.

The last *Earl Marshal* was *Henry Howard* Earl of *Arundel*, who died in 1652, his Father *Thomas* Earl of *Arundel* and he enjoying that Office onely for the term of their lives by the Kings Letters Patents.

At the Coronation of His Majesty now Raigning, the present Earl of *Suffolk* for that Solemnity onely was made *Earl Marshal*.

At present that great Office is executed in part by a Commission granted by His Majesty to *John* Lord *Roberts*, Lord *Privy Seal*, to *Henry Pierpoint* Marquis of *Dorchester*, to *Edward Montague* Earl of *Manchester* and Lord *Chamberlain*, and to
Charles

Charles Howard Earl of Carlisle,
&c.

Admiral. The Ninth and last Great Officer of the Crown is the Lord *High Admiral of England*, whose Trust and Honour is so great, that this Office hath usually been given either to some of the Kings younger Sons, near Kinsmen, or to some one of the highest and chiefest of all the Nobility.

He is called *Admiral* from *Amir* in *Arabick*, and *αμιρ* in the *Greek*, that is *Praefectus Marinus*, a word borrowed from the Eastern Empire, where such kind of compounds were much in request, and introduced into *England* after the Wars in the *Holy Land* by King *Richard* or King *Edward* I.

The Patent of the Lord *Admiral* did anciently run thus, *Anglia, Hibernia, & Aquitania, Magnus Admirallus*; but at present thus, *Anglia & Hibernia ac Dominiorum & Insularum earundem, Villa Caesaria, & Mar-*

& Marchiarum ejusdem, Normandia, Gasconia, & Aquitania, Magnus Admirallus & Praefectus Generalis Classis & Marium dictorum Regnorum.

To the Lord High Admiral of *England* is by the King intrusted the management of all *Maritime Affairs*, as well in respect of *Jurisdiction* as *Protection*. He is that High Officer or Magistrate to whom is committed the Government of the *Kings Navy*, with Power of decision in all *Causas Maritime*, as well *Civil* as *Criminal*; of all things done upon or beyond the Sea in any part of the World, all things done upon the Sea Coasts in all *Ports* and *Havens*, and upon all Rivers below the first bridge next toward the Sea.

The Lord Admiral hath the power to commissionate a *Vice Admiral*, a *Reer-Admiral*, and all Sea-Captains, also *Deputies* for particular Coasts, *Coroners* to view dead bodies found on the Sea Coasts or at Sea, *Commissioners* or *Judges* for exercising

exercising Justice in the Court of Admiralty, to imprison, release, &c.

He hath sometimes a Commission to bestow Knighthood to such as shall deserve it at Sea.

To the Lord Admiral belongs by Law and Custom all penalties and amercements of all Transgressors at Sea; on the Sea Shore, in Ports, and from the first Bridge on Rivers towards the Sea; also the goods of Pyrates, Felons, or Capital Faulters; condemned, outlawed, or horned. Moreover all Waifs, Stray Goods, Wrecks of Sea, Deodands, a share of all lawful Prizes, Lagon, Jetson, and Flotson, as our Lawyers term it; that is, Goods lying in the Sea on Ground, Goods floating on the Sea, and goods cast by the Sea on the Shore, not granted to Lords of Mannors adjoining to the Sea: All great Fishes, as Sea-Hogs, and other Fishes of extraordinary bigness, called Royal Fishes, except only Whales and Sturgeons.

This

This High Dignity is at present enjoyed by the Kings only Brother the illustrious Prince James Duke of York.

CHAP XIII.

Of the Kings Court, the Ecclesiastical, Civil, and Military Government thereof, with a Catalogue of the Kings Privy Counsellors, of the Kings Judges, Sergeants, &c.

The Court of the King of England is a Monarchy within a Monarchy, consisting of Ecclesiastical, Civil, and Military Persons and Government.

For the Ecclesiastical Government of the Kings Court, there is first a Dean of the Kings Chappel, who is usually some grave Learned Prelate, chosen by the King, and

Ecclesiastical Government.

who

who as Dean acknowledgeth no *Superiour* but the King, for as the Kings Palace is exempt from all inferiour Temporal Jurisdiction, so is his Chappel from all Spiritual; it is called *Capella Dominica*, the *Demean* Chappel, is not within the Jurisdiction or Diocess of any Bishop, but as a *Regal Peculiar* exempt and reserved to the Visitation and Immediate Government of the King, who is *Supreme Ordinary*, and as it were Prime Bishop over all the Churches and Bishops of *England*.

By the Dean are chosen all other Officers of the Chappel, *viz.* a *Sub-dean*, or *Precentor Capella*; 32 Gentlemen of the Chappel; whereof 12 are *Priests*, and one of them is *Confessor* to the Kings Household; whose Office is to read Prayers every Morning to the Family, to visit the sick, to examine and prepare Communicants, to inform such as desire advice in any Case of Conscience or Point of Religion, &c.

The

The other 20 Gentlemen, commonly called *Clerks* of the Chappel, are with the aforesaid Priests to perform in the Chappel the Office of Divine Service in *Praying, Singing, &c.* One of these being well skilled in *Musick*, is chosen *Master of the Children*, whereof there are 12 in Ordinary, to instruct them in the Rules and Art of Musick for the Service of the Chappel. Three other of the said Clerks are chosen to be *Organists*, to whom are joyned upon *Sundays, Collar days*, and other *Holydays*; the *Saickbuts* and *Cornets* belonging to the Kings Private Musick, to make the Chappel Musick more full and compleat.

There are moreover 4 Officers called *Vergers*, from the Silver Rods carried in their hands, also a *Sergeant*, 2 *Yeomen*, and a *Groom* of the Chappel.

In the Kings Chappel *thrice* every day Prayers are read, and Gods Service and Worship performed with

with great *Decency, Order, and Devotion*, and should be a *Pattern* to all other Churches and Chappels of *England*.

The King hath also his private Oratory where some of his Chaplains read Divine Service to the King on working dayes every Morning and every Evening.

Twelve days in the year, being high and principal Festivals, His Majesty after Divine Service, attended with His principal Nobility, adorned with their *Collars* of the *Garter*, in a grave solemn manner at the *Altar Offers* a sum of *Gold* to God, in *signum specialis Domini*, that by his Grace he is King, and holdeth all of him.

All Offerings made at the Holy Altar by the King and Queen, did antiently belong to the disposal of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, if his Grace were present, wherefoever the Court was, but now to the Dean of the Chappel, to be distributed amongst the poor.

Those

Those 12 days are first *Christmass, Easter, Whitsunday*, and *All Saints*, called *Household-days*; upon which the *Besant* or *Gold* to be offered, is delivered to the King by the Lord *Steward* or some other of the principal Officers: then *New-years-day, Twelf-day*, upon the latter of which *Gold, Frankincense* and *Myrrhe*, in several Purfes are offered by the King: Lastly, *Candlemas, Annunciation, Ascension, Trinity Sunday, St. John Baptist,* and *Michaelmas-day*, when only *Gold* is offered. Upon *Christmass, Easter, and Whitsunday*, His Majesty usually receives the Holy *Sacrament*, none but two or three of the Principal Bishops communicating with Him.

The King hath also (besides many *Extraordinary*) 48 *Chaplains* in *Ordinary*, who are usually eminent Doctors in Divinity; whereof 4 every Moneth wait at Court to preach in the Chappel on Sundays and other Festivals before the King, and

and in the Morning early on Sundays before the Household, to read Divine Service before the King, out of Chappel daily, twice in the Kings private Oratory, to give Thanks at Table in the Clerk of the Closets absence.

In time of *Lent*, according to Antient Laudable Custom, the Divine Service and Preaching is performed in a more solemn manner.

Antiently at Court there were Sermons in *Lent* onely, and that in the Afternoon, in the open Court, and then only by Bishops, Deans, and principal Prebendaries: Our Ancestors judging that time enough, & those persons only fit to teach such an Auditory their duty to God and Man. Antiently also the *Lent* Preachers were all appointed by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*. Now on the first *Wednesday*, called *Ash-wednesday*, in the Morning, begins the *Dean* of the Chappel to preach, on each *Wednesday* after one of his Majesties

Majesties more eloquent *Chaplains*, every Friday the *Dean* of some Cathedral or Collegiate Church: on the last *Friday* called *Good Friday*, is always to preach the *Dean* of *Westminster*; on every *Sunday* in *Lent* some *Right Reverend Bishop* preacheth, and on the last *Sunday* of *Lent*, called *Palm-Sunday*, is to preach an *Archbishop*, and upon *Easter-day* the *Lord High Almoner*, who is usually some principal Bishop, that disposeth of the Kings *Almes*, and for that use receiveth (besides other moneys allowed by the King) all *Deodands & Bona Felonum de se*, to be that way disposed.

In *France* the *Grand Aumosnier* is principal of all the *Ecclesiastiques* of the Court, and all Officers of the Kings Chappel; he receiveth their Oaths of Allegiance, and himself swears only to the King for that Office; he hath the disposition of all *Hospitals*, the Charge for delivering Prisoners pardoned by the King at his coming to the Crown, or at his

his Coronation or first entrance into any of his Cities.

Under the Lord High Almoner there is a *Subalmoner*, two *Yeomen*, and two *Grooms* of the *Almonry*.

Besides all these, the King hath a *Clerk* of the Closet or *Confessor* to His Majesty, who is commonly some reverend discreet Divine extraordinarily esteemed by His Majesty, whose *Office* is to attend at the Kings right hand during Divine Service, to resolve all doubts concerning spiritual matters, &c.

The Present Dean of the Chappel is Doctor *Blansford* Bishop of *Oxford*, whose Fee is 200 *l.* yearly and a Table, his Subdean is Doctor *Jones*, whose Fee is 100 *l.* yearly.

The Fee of each Priest and Clerk of the Chappel is 70 *l.* yearly.

The *Clerk* of the Closet is Doctor *Crew* Dean of *Chichester*, a younger son to the Lord *Crew* of *Stene* in *Com. Northampton*, receives 20 Nobles Fee *per annum*.

The

The Lord High Almoner is Doctor *Henchman* Bishop of *London*, hath no Fee: his *Sub-Almoner* is Doctor *Perinobes*, whose Fee is 6 *l.* 6 *s.* 10 *d.*

For the Civil Government of the Kings Court, the Chief Officer is the Lord Steward, called also in the time of *Henry 8.* the *Great Master* of the Kings Household after the French Mode, but *Primo Maria*, and ever since called the Lord Steward of the Kings Household.

He hath Authority over all Officers and Servants of the Kings House, except those of His Majesties Chappel, Chamber, and Stable, &c.

He judgeth of all disorders committed in the Court, or within the *Verge*, which is every way within 12 miles of the chief Tunnel of the Court (only *London* by Charter is exempted) for the Law having an high esteem of the dignity of the Kings settled Mansion-House, laid

M

our

242 The present State

out such a Plot of ground about his House (as a *Haut Pas* or *Foot-Carpet* spread about the Kings Chair of *Estate*, that ought to be more cleared and void than other places) to be subject to a special exempted Jurisdiction depending on the Kings Person and Great Officers, that so, where the King comes, there should come with him *Peace* and *Order*, and an *Ausfulness* and *Reverence* in mens hearts; besides it would have been a kind of eclipsing of the Kings Honour, that where the King was, any Justice should be sought, but immediately from the Kings own Officers; and therefore from very antient times the Jurisdiction of the *Verge* hath been executed by the Lord Steward with great Ceremony in the nature of a Peculiar Kings Bench, and that not only *within* but *without* the Kings Dominions; for so it is recorded that one *Engleam* of *Nogent* in *France*, for stealing *Silver Dishes* out of the *House* of *Edward* I. King of *England*, then
at

of England. 243

at *Paris* (after the matter had been debated in the Council of the King of *France* touching the Jurisdiction, and ordered that the King of *England* should enjoy this Kingly Prerogative of his *Household*) was condemned by *Sir Robert Fitz-John* then Steward to the King of *England*, and hanged in *St. Germaines Fields*.

The Lord Steward is a *White-Staffe-Officer*, for he in the Kings Presence carrieth a *White Staffe*, and at other times going abroad, it is carried by a Foot-man bare-headed. At the death of the King, over the *Hearse* made for the Kings Body, he breaketh this *Staffe*, and thereby dischargeth all the Officers, whom the succeeding King out of his *meer grace* doth re-establish each one in his former Office.

This eminent employment is now enjoyed by *James Duke of Ormond*, whose Fee is 100*l* yearly, and 16 Dishes daily each Meal, with Wine, Beer, &c. M 2 The

244 **The present State**

The next Officer is the Lord Chamberlain, who hath the oversight of all Officers belonging to the Kings Chamber, except the Precincts of the Kings Bed Chamber, which is wholly under the Groom of the Stole; and all above Stairs; who are all sworn by him (or his Warrant to the Gentlemen Ushers) to the King. He hath also the oversight of the Officers of the Wardrobes at all his Majesties Houses, and of the removing Wardrobes, or of Beds, of the Tents, Revels, Musick, Comedians, Hunting, and of the Messengers, of the Trumpeters, Drummers, of all Handy-Crafts and Artisans retained in the Kings Service. Moreover he hath the oversight of the Heralds and Pursivants, and Sergeants at Arms; of all Physicians, Apothecaries, Surgeons, Barbers, &c. To him also belongeth the oversight of the Chaplains, though himself be a Lay-man; contrary in this particular

of England.

245

lar to the antient Custom of *England*, and Modern Custom of all other Kingdoms, where Ecclesiastiques are never under the ordering of Lay-men.

Also of the Charges of Coronations, Marriages, Entries, Cavalcades, Funerals, &c.

The Fee of the Lord Chamberlain of the *Kings House* is 100 l. yearly, and 16 Dishes each Meal, with all the Appurtenances.

This Office is now in the hands of *Edward Montague*, Lord *Kymbolton*; Viscount *Mandevile*, and Earl of *Manchester*; as also Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter.

Most of the above-named Offices and Places are in the gift and disposal of the Lord Chamberlain.

The Third Great Officer of the *Kings Court* is the *Master of the Horse*, antiently called *Comes Stabuli*, or *Constable*, to whom a higher Employment and Power was

246 The present State

was then given, and this taken from him.

This great Officer hath now the ordering and disposal of all the Kings Stables and Races of Horses, and had heretofore of all the Posts of *England*. He hath also the power over Escuiries and Pages, over the Footmen, Grooms, Riders of the Great Horses, Farriers, Smiths, Coach men Sadlers, and all other Trades working to the Kings Stables, to all whom he (or by his Warrant the Avenor) giveth an Oath to be true and faithful.

He hath the Charge of all Lands and Revenues appointed for the Kings breed of Horses, and for Charges of the Stable, and for Litters Coaches, Sumpter Horses, &c.

He only hath the *Priviledge* to make use of any Horses, Pages, Footmen belonging to the Kings Stable.

At any *Solemn Cavalcade* he rides next behind the King, and leads a *Lear Horse of State*.

This

of England. 247

This great Honour is now enjoyed by *George Duke of Buckingham*.

His yearly Fee is 666 *l.* 16 *s.* 4 *d.* and a Table of 16 dishes each Meal.

The account of the Stables for Hors-Meat, Livery Wages and Board Wages are brought by the Avenor, being Chief Clerk of the Avery, to be passed and allowed by the Board of the *Green-Cloth*.

Under these three Principal Officers of His Majesties Household are almost all the other Officers and Servants.

First, under the Lord Steward in the *Compting-house* is the

Treasurer of the Household.

Comptroller.

Cofferer.

Master of the Household.

Two Clerks of the *Green-Cloth*.

Two Clerks Comptrollers.

One Sergeant.

Two Yeomen.

M 4

The

The Cofferers Clerks, or Clerks
of the Assignment.

The Groom.

Two Messengers.

It is called the *Compting-house*, because the Accompts for all Expences of the Kings Household are there taken daily by the Lord Steward, the Treasurer, the Comptroller, the Cofferer, the Master of the Household, the two Clerks of the Green-Cloth, and the two Clerks Comptrollers, who also there make Provisions for the Household, according to the Law of the Land, and make Payments and Orders for the well-governing of the Servants of the Household.

In the *Compting-House* is the *Green-Cloth*, which is a Court of Justice continually sitting in the Kings House, composed of the Persons last mentioned; whereof the three first are usually of the Kings *Privy Council*. To this Court being the first and most antient Court of *England*, is committed the charge

charge and over-sight of the Kings *Court Royal* for matters of Justice and Government, with Authority for maintaining the *Peace* within 12 miles distance, wheresoever the Court shall be; and *within* the Kings House the power of *correcting* all the Servants therein that shall any way offend.

It is called the *Green-cloth*, of a Green-Cloth whereat they sit, over whom are the Arms of the *Compting-house*, bearing *Vert a Key and a Rod Or, a Staffe Argent Saultier*, signifying their Power to reward and correct, as Persons for their great wisdom and experience thought fit by His Majesty to exercise both these Functions in his Royal House.

The *Treasurer* of the Kings House is always of the *Privy Council*, and in absence of the Lord Steward hath power with the *Comptroller* and *Steward* of the *Marshalsea* to hear and determine *Treasons, Felonies*, and other inferiour Crimes committed

ted within the Kings Palace, and that by Verdict of the Kings Household.

Household Servants within the *Check Roll*, if any be found guilty of Felony, *no benefit of Clergy* is to be allowed him. Antiently this Court might have held *Pleas of Freehold* also.

His yearly Fee 124 l. 14 s. 8 d. and a Table of 16 Dishes each Meal. He bears a White Staffe, and is at present Sir *Thomas Clifford*.

The *Comptrollers Office* is to *controul* the Accounts and Reckonings of the *Green Cloth*.

His yearly Fee is 107 l. 12 s. 4 d. a Table of 16 Dishes each Meal. He bears a White Staffe, and is at present *Francis Lord Newport*.

The *Cofferer* is also a Principal Officer, hath a special charge and oversight of other Officers of the House, for their good Demeanour and

and Carriage in their Offices, and is to pay the Wages to the Kings Servants below Stairs, and for Provisions, by the direction and allowance of the *Green-Cloth*.

His yearly Fee is 100 l. a Table of 7 Dishes daily, and is now Colonel *Will. Asburnham*.

The next is the *Master of the Household*, whose Office is to survey the Accounts of the House.

His Fee 100 Marks and 7 Dishes daily, enjoyed by Sir *Herbert Price*.

All Bills of Controulment, Parcels and Brievements are tolled and allowed by the Clerks Comptrollers, and summed up by the Clerks of the *Green Cloth*.

The Two Clerks of the *Green-Cloth* are Sir *Henry Wood* and Sir *Stephen Fox*, and the two Clerks Comptrollers Sir *William Boreman* and Sir *Winston Churchill*.

The yearly Fee to each of these four, is 48 l. 13 s. 4 d. and between them

them 2 Tables of 7 Dishes to each Table.

The rest of the Compting-House being less considerable, shall for brevity be past over, and for other Officers below stairs, onely their Names and Number shall be noted, their Fees being not considerable, except the Sergeants Fee of each Office; only the Reader may here take notice that although the King payes still the antient Fees which at first were of above 10 times the value they are now, yet the Perquisites in many Offices, make sometimes a place of 10 l. Fee to be worth near 500 l. per annum.

In the Acatery or the Caterers Office, A Sergeant *Robert Angel*, a Clerk, Purveyors for Flesh and Fish, Yeomen, in all 12 persons.

In the Poultry, A Sergeant *Simon Ager*, a Clerk, Yeomen, Grooms, Purveyors, in all 10 persons.

In the Bake-House, A Sergeant *Nicholas Johnson*, a Clerk, divers Yeomen,

Yeomen, a Garnitor, divers Purveyors, Grooms, and Conducts, in all 17 Persons.

In the Wood-Yard, A Sergeant *Mr. Bland*, a Clerk, Yeomen, Groom, and Pages in all 8 persons.

In the Scullery, A Sergeant *William Dike*, a Clerk, Yeomen, Grooms, and Pages, in all 12 Persons.

In the Larder, A Sergeant, a Clerk, 3 Yeomen, 3 Grooms, 2 Pages.

In the Pastry, A Sergeant *William Astley*, a Clerk, Yeomen, Grooms, and Children, in all 11 persons.

Note, That from the Pastry to the Acatery, as the Clerk of one Office dies, the Clerk of the next under Office succeeds; and from the Acatery as any of the Clerks of the Avenary, Spisery, or Kitchin die, the Clerk of the Acatery succeeds; and from thence to be one of the Clerks *Controuler*, then Clerk of the

254 The present State

the *Compting-house*, then Master of the *Houhold*, lastly *Cofferer* of the *Houhold*; higher than which this Succession goes not.

Note also, That in each Office there is a succession from one to another, as one of the Children may come to be Groom, then Yeoman, then Gentleman, then Sergeant, as he happens to outlive them above him.

In the Pantry, A Sergeant *Francis Cobb*, Yeomen, Grooms, Pages, &c. in all 11.

In the Cellar, A Sergeant *Richard Dalton*, a Gentleman, Yeomen, Grooms, Purveyors, Pages, in all 12.

In the Buttery, A Gentleman *Robert Ernley*, Yeoman, Grooms, Pages, Purveyors, in all 11.

In the Pitcher-house, A Yeoman, Grooms, Page, and Clerk, in all 5 persons.

of England.

In the Spicery, Three Clerks and a Grocer.

In the Chandlery, A Sergeant *Sir Thomas Monings* Baronet, 2 Yeomen, 2 Grooms, and a Page, in all 6 persons.

In the Wasery, A Yeoman and a Groom.

In the Confectionary, A Sergeant, 2 Yeomen, a Groom, and a Page.

In the Emry, A Sergeant *Ed. Wynn*, a Gentleman, 2 Yeomen, a Groom, and 2 Pages.

In the Laundry, A Yeoman, a Groom, 3 Pages, and a Draper.

In the Kitchen, Five Clerks, 3 to the King, viz.

Henry Firebrase,
John Clements, } Esquires.
Ralph Jackson, }

and 2 Clerks to the Queen, viz.

John Manly, } Esquires.
Thomas Virian, }

The chief of these 5 Clerks hath a Fee and Diet equal to an Officer of the *Green.Cloth*: A Master Cook to the King *John Sayer*, a Master Cook

256 The present State

Cook to the Queen *Abr. Harcourt*, a Master Cook to the Household *Will. Austin*; each of these 3 a Table of 5 Dishes: 6 Yeomen, 7 Grooms, 5 Children, in all 26 persons.

In the Boyling-House, A Yeoman, 2 Grooms.

In the Scalding-House, Yeomen, Grooms, and Pages, in all 6.

Harbingers, 2 Gentlemen *Peter Watson* first Gentleman, 6 Yeomen.

In the Almonry, Sub-Almoner, 2 Yeomen, 2 Grooms.

Porters at Gate, A Sergeant *Sir Edward Brett*, 2 Yeomen, 4 Grooms.

Cart-takers, 6 in number.

Surveyors of the Dresser, 2 persons.

Marshals of the Hall, 4.

Sewers of the Hall, 5.

Wayters of the Hall, 12.

Messenger of the Compting-House, 1.

Bell-Ringer, 1.

Long-

of England. 257

Long Cart-takers, 4.

Wine-Porters, 8.

Wood-Bearer, 1.

The Cock, 1.

Supernumerary servants to the last King, viz. *In the Poultry* 2, *In the Almonry* 1, and *in the Pastry* 1.

Besides the fore-named Officers below Stairs, there are also under the said *Lord Steward* all the Officers belonging to the *Queens Kitchen*, *Cellar*, *Pantry*, &c. and to the *Kings Privy Kitchen*, and to the *Lords Kitchen*, together with *Children*, *Scowrers*, *Turn-broaches*, &c. in all 68.

A List of His Majesties Servants in Ordinary above Stairs.

Gentlemen of the *Bed-Chamber*, whereof the first is called *Groom of the Stole*, that is according to the signification of the word in Greek,

258 The present State

Greek, from whence first the Latines, and thence the Italian and French derive it) Groom or Servant of the Robe or Vestment: He having the Office and Honour to present and put on His Majesties first Garment or Shirt every morning, and to order the things of the Bed-Chamber.

The Gentlemen of the Bed-Chamber consist usually of the Prime Nobility of England. Their Office in general is each one in his turn to wait a Week in every Quarter in the Kings Bed-Chamber, there to lie by the King on a Pallet-Bed all night, and in the absence of the Groom of the Stole to supply his place.

The yearly Fee to each is a 1000 l.

Their Names follow according to their Order,

John Earl of Bath, Groom of the Stole and first Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber.

George Duke of Buckingham.
Charles

of England.

- Charles Duke of Richmond.
- Christopher Duke of Albemarle.
- William Duke of Newcastle.
- Earl of Ogle.
- Earl of Ossory.
- Earl of Suffolk.
- Earl of Rochester.
- Lord Gerrard.
- Lord Crofts.
- Lord Lauderdale.
- Lord Mandevill.
- Lord Buckhurst.

The Vice-Chamberlain is Sir George Carteret.

Keeper of His Majesties Privy-Purse is Mr. May.

Treasurer of the Chamber is Sir Edward Griffin. He payes riding and lodging wages as the Lord Chamberlain shall direct.

Doctor Wren, Surveyor General of his Majesties Works.

Master of the Robes belonging to His Majesties person is at present Lawrence Hide second Son to the Earl of Clarendon. His Office is to have

have the ordering of all His Majesties Robes, as those of *Coronation*, of *St. Georges Feast*, and of *Parliament*; also of all his Majesties Wearing Apparel, of his Collar of *Effes*, *Georges*, and *Garters* beset with *Diamonds* and *Pearls*.

Grooms of the Bed-Chamber.

- Henry Seymour,*
- John Ashburnham,*
- Thomas Elliot,*
- David Walter,*
- William Legg,*
- Sylvius Titus,*
- Thomas Killegrew,*
- Robert Philips,*
- Edward Progers,*
- Richard Lane,*
- James Hamilton,*
- Henry Coventry.*

} Esquires.

These are to be under the degree of *Knights*.

Their

Their Office is to attend in the *Kings Bed-Chamber*, to dress and undress the King in private, &c.
The yearly Fee to each is 500 l.

Pages of the Bed-Chamber are 6.

- Francis Rogers.*
- Hugh Griffith.*
- Maurice de la Dale.*
- Theod. Randu.*
- William Chiffins.*
- Arundel Bull.*

The fifth of these is also Keeper of the *Kings Cabinet Closet*.

Gentlemen Ushers of the Privy-Chamber.

- Marmaduke Darcy Esquire.*
- Sir Paul Neale.*
- John Milton Esquire.*
- Sir Thomas Not.*

These wait one at a time in the *Privy-Lodgings*, &c.

Gentle-

*Gentlemen of the Privy-Chamber
in Ordinary.*

Midsummer Quarter.

*Sir Edward Griffin.
Sir Francis Cobb.
Bullen Reymes.
Col. Carlos.
Sir Robert Benlos.
Sir Thomas Sands.
Edward Vernon.
William Neale.
Sir Richard Odely.
Sir John Colton.
Ambrose Pudsey.
Francis Berkley.*

Michaelmas Quarter.

*John Hall.
Sir Edward Sutton.
Sir Robert Hillyard.
Sir William Hayward.
Sir Samuel Moreland.
William Walter.*

Sir

*Sir John Lockett.
Sir Robert Killegrew.
Sir William Sanderfon.
Sir Charles Wheeler.
Arthur Berkley.
John Dawes.*

Christmas Quarter.

*Edward Grey.
Sir Joseph Seymore.
Sir Peter Killegrew.
Sir Edward Savage.
Sir Thomas Nevil.
Henry Markham.
Sir John Morton.
Sir John Elwes.
Sir Jonathan Trelawny.
John Scot.
Sir John Dawes.
John Beaumont.*

Lady-day Quarter.

*Peregrin Bertne.
Sir Thomas Daniel.
Sir Jacob Ashley.*

Sir

264 **The present State**

Sir Francis Lawley.
Robert Thomas.
Sir Gilbert Gerard.
Sir Francis Clerk.
Sir John Mince.
Sir William Swan.
Colonel Charles Progers.
John Crook.
Sir Philip Carteret.

In number 48 ; all Knights or Esquires of note.

Their Office is 12 every Quarter, to wait on the Kings Person within doors and without, so long as His Majesty is on foot, and when the King eats in the Privy Chamber, they wait at the Table and bring in his Meat. They wait also at the reception of Embassadors, and every Night two of them lie in the Kings Privy-Chamber.

A Gentleman of the Privy-Chamber by the Kings Commandment onely, without any written Commission, is sufficient to arrest any Peer

of England. 265

Peer of England; as Cardinal Wolsey acknowledged.

Grooms of the Privy-Chamber in Ordinary, in number 6, all Gentlemen of Quality.

viz. Maurice Wynne.
James Progers,
Adrian May.
Robert Thompson.
James Elliot.
Thomas Roffe.

These (as all Grooms) wait without Sword, Cloak, or Hat; whereas the Gentlemen of the Privy-Chamber wear alwayes Cloak and Sword.

In the presence Chamber, Gentlemen-Ushers daily Waiters in Ordinary are 4, whereof the first hath the Office of Black Rod, and in time of Parliament is to attend every day the Lords House, and is also Usher of the Honourable Order of the Garter. They are now

Sir John Ayton, N Sir

266 **The present State**

Sir Edward Carteret,
Richard March,
Sir James Mercer.
Tho. Duppa, Assistant Daily Waiter.

Their Office is to wait in the Presence Chamber, and to attend next the Kings Person, and after the Lord Chamberlain and the Vice-Chamberlain to Order all affairs, and to obey these are all under-Officers above Stairs.

Gentlemen-ushers, Quarter-waiters in Ordinary, in number 8. viz. *Francis Bowman, Paul French, Richard Bagnal, Edward Bowman, Peter Watson, Nicolas Levet, Ralph Whistler, Nicolas Staney* Esquires. These wait also in the Presence Chamber, and are to give directions in the absence of the Gentlemen-ushers daily waiters to the Grooms and Pages and other under Officers; who are to attend in all Offices next below the Gentlemen-ushers. The

of England.

The Grooms of the Great Chamber are 14, the Pages of the Presence Chamber 4.
Six Gentlemen Waiters.

Cup-Bearers in Ordinary.
James Halsal, Esquire.
Charles Littleton, Esquire.
Sir William Fleetwood, Knight.
Sir Philip Palmer, Esquire.
Mr. Ayrskiv, Esquire.

Carvers in Ordinary.
John Trelawny,
John Cooper,
Christopher Amias,
William Champneys, } Esquires.

Sewers to the Person in Ordinary.
Richard Irwyn Esquire,
Thomas Man Esquire,
Sir John Covert,
Bevil Skelton Esquire.

Esquires of the Body in Ordinary.
Ferdinando Massam,

268 **The present State**

Richard Manch,
Sr. John Hammore,
Henry Norwood,
Andrew Newport,
Thomas Cheek,

Their Office to guard the Kings Person by Night, to set the Watch and give the Word, and keep good Order in the whole House by Night, as the Lord Chamberlain and his other Officers are to do by Day.

The Sewers of the Chamber are 8.

Grooms Porter, Thomas Offley Esquire.

His Office to see the Kings Lodgings furnisht with Tables, Chairs, Stools, Firing, to furnish Cards, Dice, &c. to decide disputes arising at Cards, Dice, Bowlings, &c.

There are 16 *Sergeants at Arms*, all Gentlemen or Knights attending upon His Majesty. There are also 4 other *Sergeants at Arms*, whereof one

of England. 269

one attends the Lord President of *Wales*, another attends the Speaker of the House of Commons, and another the Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

CHAPLAINS in Ordinary, 4 for every Month, as followeth:

January. March.

Dr Sancroft, *Dr Crofts,*
Dr Brideock, *Dr Reeves,*
Dr Jos. Beaumont, *Dr Brough,*
Dr Colebrand. *Dr Mense.*

February. April.

Dr Pierce, *Dr Maine,*
Dr Shute, *Dr Compton,*
Dr Duport, *Dr Stillingfleet,*
Dr Cradock. *Dr Creighton.*

May.

May.	September.
Dr Fell,	Dr Pearson,
Dr Sudbury,	Dr Stradlin,
Dr Bathurst,	Dr Perinchief,
Mr Only.	Dr Tillotson.
June.	October.
Dr Wood,	Dr Outtram,
Dr Carlton,	Dr Bell,
Dr Basire,	Dr Tho. Tulley,
Dr Neale.	Dr Smallwood.
July.	November.
Dr Cartwright,	Dr Allestree,
Dr Castilian,	Dr Benson,
Dr Smith,	Dr John Lloyd,
Dr Maggot,	Dr William Lloyd.
August.	December.
Dr Fleetwood,	Dr Hodges,
Mr Isaac Barrow,	Dr Hardye,
Dr Thorne,	Dr Ball,
Dr Offly.	Dr Lamplugh.

These

These 48 Chaplains in Ordinary are usually Doctors in Divinity, and for the most part Deans or Prebendaries, and all Principal Predicators.

Physicians in Ordinary to His Majesties Person are,
 Sir Alexander Frazer,
 Sir John Baber,
 Doctor Clark,
 Doctor Hinton, assigned to attend upon the Queen.

Physicians in Ordinary to the Household.
 Doctor Waldron.
 Doctor Scarborough for the Tower of London.

Jewel House, Sir Gilbert Talbot Master and Treasurer, and three under Officers called Yeomen and Grooms.

Whose Office is to take Charge of all Vessels of Gold or Silver gilt for the King and Queens Table, of

N 4

all

all Plate in the Tower, of Chains and loose Jewels, not fixt to any Garment.

The Master of Ceremonies is Sir Charles Cotterel, Fee 200 l. one Assistant Clement Cotterel Esquire, Fee 120 l. and one Marshal.

Amongst His Majesties Servants in Ordinary are to be reckoned the three Kings of Arms; six Heralds, and four Pursivants at Armes; the now Kings of Armes being these: First, Sir Edward Walker Knight, whose Title is Garter, and unto whose Office it chiefly belongeth to attend and direct at those Ceremonies and Solemnities as concern the most noble Order of the Garter; and to Marshal the Solemn Funerals of the Knights of that Order; as also of the Peers of this Realm; and to direct in all things else relating to Armes, which do appertain to the Peerage.

Secondly, Sir Edward Bish Knight, whose Title is Clanencieux, and

and his Office chiefly to regulate and direct the Proceedings at such Solemn Funerals of all degrees, under the Peerage of this Realm, as shall be Celebrated in his Province, which is the Counties on the South of Trent, and whatsoever else there relateth to Armes.

Thirdly, William Dugdale Esquire, whose Title is Norroy, and whose Office is chiefly to regulate and direct as aforesaid throughout his Province on the North of Trent.

The six Heralds are these:

Elias Ashmole, Windsor Herald,

Henry St. George, Richmond.

Thomas Lee, Chester.

Sir Thomas St. George Knight, Somerset.

John Wingfield, York.

And Robert Chaloner, Lancaster.

The four Pursivants are these, viz.

Henry Dethick Rouge-Croix.

N 5 Robert

274 **The present State**

*Robert Sanford Rouge Dragon.
Thomas Holford Portcullice.
And Thomas Segar Blewman-
tle.*

The Offices of which *Heralds* and *Pursuivants*, besides their Services (*viz.* all or some of them) at great Solemnities as aforesaid, is, together with the said Kings of Arms to attend at all Publick Solemnities: and they, or some of them to Proclaim War and Peace, carry *Defiances*, Summon Fortified Places, or Rebels in Arms, Proclaim Traytors, and to do their best Service in whatsoever relateth to the Nobility and Gentry of this Realme, in point of Honour and Armes.

Of *Wardrobes* the King hath (besides the Great Wardrobe, whereof a particular account shall be given elsewhere) divers standing Wardrobes at *Whitehall, Windsor, Hampton Court, the Tower of London, Green-*

of England.

275

Greenwich &c. whereof there are divers Officers. Lastly, removing Wardrobes, whereof there is one Yeoman, 2 Grooms, and 3 Pages,

In the Office of the Tents, Toyles, Hayes, and Pavilions, 2 Masters, 4 Yeoman, 1 Groom, 1 Clerk Comptroler, 1 Clerk of the Tents.

A Master of the Revels Office to order all things concerning Comedies, &c. there is 1 Yeoman, 1 Groom.

Engraver, Sculptor, 1 in each Office.

In the Office of the Robes, besides the Master aforesaid, there is, 1 Yeoman, 3 Grooms, 1 Page, 2 Purveyors, 1 Brusher, 1 Traylor, 1 Dyer, 1 Girdler, 1 Clerk, 1 Lace-man, 1 Cutter and Racer, 2 Embroiderers, 2 Silkmen, 1 Shoemaker, 1 Perfumer, 1 Feather-maker, 1 Mil-liner, 1 Mercer, 1 Hosier, 1 Draper, 1 Surveyor of the Dresser and Chamber, &c.

*Falconers, Sir Allen Apsley Ma-
ster*

276 The present State

ster of the Hawks, and other Officers under him about London and other places belonging to the King, in all 33.

Huntsmen for the Buck-hounds in Ordinary, John Carey Esquire, Master of the Buck-hounds, and under him a Sergeant and 34 other persons.

Otter-hounds, Simon Smith Esquire, Master of the Otter-hounds.

Huntsmen for the Harriers, Master of the Harriers, Mr. Elliot, and 5 under him.

Armory at the Tower, Master of the Ordnance, now in several Commissioners, William Legg Lieutenant of the Ordnance, and Master Armorer, and 17 under Officers.

Messengers of the Chamber in Ordinary, first 2 Clerks of the Check, then 40 more, in all 42.

One Library Keeper.

One Publick Notary.

One Poet Laureat.

Musicians in Ordinary, 62.

Trum

of England.

Trumpeters in Ordinary and Kettle Drummers are in all 15.

Drummers and Fifes 7.

Apothecaries 2, One for the Kings Person, and one for the Household.

Chirurgeons 5.

Barbers 2.

Printers 2. Another for the Oriental Tongue.

Bookbinder 1.

Taylors 2.

Hydrographer 1.

Stationers 2.

Knight Harbinger 1.

Post-Masters for all the Post-Towns in England, all sworn to, and paid by the King.

A Master of the Game of Cock-fighting.

Two Sergeant Skinners, Two Embroiderers.

Two keepers of the Privy Lodgings.

Two Gentlemen, and one Yeoman of the Bows.

One

278 The present State

One Cross-bow-Master , one Fletcher.
 One Cormorant keeper.
 One Hand-Gun-Maker.
 One Master and Marker of Tennis.
 One Mrs Sempstres, and one Laundress.
 One Perspective-Maker.
 One Master Fencer.
 One Haberdasher of Hatts.
 One Comb-Maker.
 One Coffee-Maker.
 One Sergeant Painter.
 One Painter.
 One Limner.
 One Picture keeper.
 One Silver-Smith.
 One Gold-smith.
 One Jeweller.
 One Perruque-Maker.
 One keeper of Pheasants and Turkeys.
 Joyner , Copyer of Pictures , Watch-Maker , Cabinet-Maker , Lock-Smith, of each one.

Game

of England.

Game of the Bears and Bulls,
 1 Master, 1 Sergeant, 1 Yeoman.
Operators for the Teeth 2.
Coffer-Bearers to the Back-Stairs,
 2.
 One Yeoman of the *Leash.*
 Watermen 55.
 Upholster , Letter-Carrier , Foreign Post, of each one.
 Officers belonging to Gardens, Bowling-Greens , Tennis-Courts , Pall-Mall, 10 Persons.
 Keeper of the Theater in *White-hall.*
 Cutler, Spurrier, Girdler, Corn-Cutter, Button-Maker, one of each.
 Embosser, Enameler, of each one.
 Writer, Flourisher, and Embellisher , Scenographer , or Designer of Prospects, Letter-Founder, Geographer, of each one.
Comedians , 17 Men and 8 Women Actors
 Gunner, Gilder, Cleanser of Pictures, Scene-keeper, Coffer-maker, Wax-Chandler, one of each.

Keeper

Keeper of Birds and Fowl in St. James's Park 1.

Keeper of the Volery, Goffe-Club-Maker, Serjeant Painter, one for each.

With divers other Officers and Servants under the Lord Chamberlain; to serve His Majesty upon Extraordinary occasions and services.

A List of His Majesties Officers and Servants under the Master of the Horse.

First are 12 *Querries*, so called from the French word *Escuyer*, derived from *Escurie* a *Stable*. Their Office is to attend the King on Hunting on Progress, or on any occasion of riding abroad, to help His Majesty up and down from his Horse, &c.

Of these there are 4 called *Querries* of the *Crown Stable*, viz.

Sir

Sir *William Armorer*.
 Captain *John Mazine* Esquire.
James Porter Esquire.
John Mazine Jun. Esquire.

The other 8 are called *Querries* of the *Hunting Stable*, viz.

Andrew Cole Esquire.
 Sir *Charles Alderdale* Knight.
Thomas Windham Esquire.
 Sir *Nicholas Armorer* Knight.
Henry Progers Esquire.
 Sir *Robert Pye*, Knight.
Wakelif Esquire.
Walter Strickland Esquire.

The Fee to each of these is only 20*l.* yearly, according to the ancient Custom, but they have allowance for Diet to each 100*l.* yearly, besides Lodgings and 2 Horse Liveries.

Next is the *Chief Auener*, from *Avena*, *Oates*; whose yearly Fee is 40*l.*

40 l. and this place with all the following, are in the Gift of the *Master of the Horse*. This Office at present hath *Richard Mason* Esquire.

There is moreover one Clerk of the *Stable William Morgan* Esquire, 4 Yeomen Riders, 4 Child Riders, Yeoman of the Stirrup, Sergeant Marshal and Yeoman Farriers, 4 Groom Farriers, Sergeant of the Carriage, 3 Surveyors, a Squire and Yeoman Sadlers, 4 Yeoman Granators, 4 Yeoman Purveyors, a Yeoman Peckman, a Yeoman Bit-maker, 4 Coachmen, 8 Littermen, a Yeoman of the Close Waggon, 64 Grooms of the *Stable*, whereof 30 are called Grooms of the *Crown Stable*, and 34 of the *Hunting and Pad Stable*; 26 Footmen in their Liveries to run by the Kings Horse.

There is (besides some other Officers not here named) an Ancient Officer in the Kings Household, called *Clerk of the Mercat*, who within the

the Verge of the Kings Household is to keep a Standard of all Weights and Measures, and to burn all false Weights and Measures; and from the Pattern of this Standard are to be taken all the Weights and Measures of the Kingdom.

There are divers other Offices belonging to the King of great importance, which are not subordinate to any of the 3 fore-mentioned Great Officers, as *Master of the Great Wardrobe*, *Postmaster*, *Master of the Ordnance*, *Warden of the Mint*; whereof in another Treatise shortly.

In the Court of King *James* there were many more Offices, and to many Offices there belonged many more persons, which King *Charles the First* much lessened, and the present King now reigning hath yet lessened much more.

Upon the King are also attending in his Court the Lords of His Privy Council, the Reverend Judges, the

the Learned Colledge of Civilians, the Kings Council at Law, the Kings Sergeants at Law, the Masters of Requests, Secretaries of State, Clerks of the Signet, Clerks of the Council, Keeper of the Paper Office or Papers of State.

The Names of the Lords of His Majesties Most Honourable Privy Council.

His Royal Highness the Duke of York.
His Highness Prince Rupert.
Gilbert L. Archbishop of Canterbury.
Sir Orlando Bridgman, L. Keeper of the Great Seal.
John L. Roberts Lord Privy Seal.
George Duke of Buckingham, Master of the Horse to His Majesty.
James Duke of Ormond, L. Great Steward of His Majesties Household.

Williams

William Cavendish D. of Newcastle.
Henry Lord Marquis of Dorchester.
Awbrey Earl of Oxford.
James Earl of Ossory.
Robert Earl of Lindsey Lord Great Chamberlain of England.
Edward Earl of Manchester, Lord Chamberlain to His Majesty.
John Earl of Bridgewater.
Robert Earl of Leicester.
Henry Earl of St. Albans.
Edward Earl of Sandwich.
John Earl of Bath, Groom of the Stole to His Majesty.
Arthur Earl of Anglesey.
Charles Earl of Carlisle.
William Earl of Craven.
Jo. Earl of Rothes, His Majesties Commissioner in Scotland.
Jo. Earl of Lotherdale, Secretary of State in Scotland.
Jo. Earl of Middleton.
John Earl of Tweedale.
Richard Earl of Carbery, Lord President of Wales.
Roger Earl of Orrery.
Humphrey Lord Bishop of London.

Henry

Henry Lord Arlington, one of His Majesties Principal Secretaries of State.

Francis Lord Newport, Comptroller of His Majesties Household.

Christopher Lord Hatton.

Densel Lord Holles.

John Lord Berkeley.

Anthony Lord Ashley, Chancelour of the Exchequer.

Sir Thomas Clifford Knight, Treasurer of His Majesties Household.

Sir George Carteret Knight, Vice-Chamberlain to His Majesty.

Sir John Trevor Knight, one of His Principal Secretaries of State.

Sir Thomas Ingram Knight, Chancelour of the Duchy.

Sir William Morice Knight.

Sir John Duncom Knight.

The

The Names of all the Kings Judges, the Kings Council at Law, and the Kings Sergeants at Law, &c.

IN the High Court of Chancery.
The Right Honourable *Sir Orlando Bridgeman* Knight and Baronet, Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, with whom sits as Assistants,
Sir Harbottle Grimstone Baronet, Master of the Rolls, *Sir Thomas Bennet* Knight, Doctor of Laws; *Sir William Child* Knight Doctor of Laws; *Sir Justinian Lewen* Knight Doctor of Laws; *Sir Walter Littleton* Knight; *Sir Thomas Estcourt* Knight; *Sir Mundeford Bramston* Knight, Doctor of Laws; *Sir Nathaniel Hobart* Knight; *Sir William Glascock* Knight; *Sir John Coel* Knight; *Sir Thomas Croft* Knight Doctor of Laws; *John Halsy* Esquire.
These

These twelve are called Masters of Chancery.

In the Court of the Kings Bench.

- Sir John Keeling Lord Chief Justice of the Kings Bench.
- Sir Thomas Twissden Knight and Baronet.
- Sir William Morton Knight.
- Sir Richard Rainsford Knight.

In the Court of the Common Pleas.

- Sir John Vaughan Knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
- Sir Thomas Tirrel Knight.
- Sir John Archer Knight.
- Sir William Wilde Knight and Baronet.

In the Court of the Exchequer.

- Sir Matthew Hale Knight, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer.
- Sir Christopher Turner Knight.

Sir

- Sir Timothy Littleton.
- Clement Spelman.

The Kings Sergeants and Learned Council at Law.

- Sir John Maynard Knight, the Kings Sergeant at Law.
- Sir Geofry Palmer Knight and Baronet, the Kings Attorney General.
- Sir Heneage Finch Knight and Baronet, the Kings Sollicitor General.
- Sir Job Charleton Knight, Chief Justice of Chester, His Majesties Sergeant at Law.
- Sir William Scroggs Knight, His Majesties Sergeant at Law.
- Sir Edward Turner Knight, His Majesties Council, learned in the Law.
- Sir Edward Thurland Knight, His Majesties Council, learned in the Law.
- Mr. North, Son to the Lord North, His Majesties Council, learned in the Law.

O

Roberts

290 **The present State**

Robert Milward Esquire, His Majesties Justice at *Chester*, and Council learned in the Law.

The Queen Consorts Council at Law.

Mr. Montagu the Queens Attorney General.

Sir Robert Atkins Knight of the *Bath*, the Queens Solicitor General.

Sir Frederick Hyde Knight, Her Majesties Sergeant at Law.

The Queen Mothers Council was

Sir Peter Ball Knight, Attorney.
Henry Win Solicitor.

The Duke of York's Council.

Sir Edward Turner Knight, Attorney.
Sir Edward Thurland Solicitor.

Sergeants

of England.

Sergeants at Law.

Nudgate.

Windham.

Fountain.

Seys.

Waller.

Brome.

Tournour.

Ellys.

Hardres.

Wilmott.

Goddard.

Sergeant < *Sir Rich. Hopkins* Kt.

Flynt.

Turner.

Barton.

Sir John Howel Knight

Recorder of *London.*

Bramston.

Sir Henry Peckham Kt.

Goodfellow.

Baldwin.

Powys.

Jones.

The Chief Judges and Doctors of the Civil Law.

- Sir *Giles Smit* Judge of the Arches, Knight, Doctor of Laws.
- Dr *Jenkins* Judge of the Prerogative Court.
- Dr. *Jenkins* Judge of the Admiralty.
- Sir *Robert Wiseman* the Kings Advocate, Knight, Doctor of Laws.
- Sir *William Turner* Knight, Doctor of Laws, Advocate to the Lord High Admiral.
- Sir *Walter Walker* Knight, Doctor of Laws.
- John Milles* Doctor of Laws.
- Timothy Baldwin* Doctor of Laws.
- Thomas Exton* Doctor of Laws, Chancellour to the Lord Bishop of London.
- John Clark* Doctor of Laws, His Majesties Professor of Law in Cambridge.
- Richard Lloyd* Doctor of Laws.

The

The present Secretaries of State are,

Henry Lord *Arlington*, whom for his eminent services at home and abroad, both in War and Peace, His Majesty was pleased to advance into the place of Sir *Edward Nicholas*.
 And Sir *John Trevor*, who for his great abilities and successful Negotiations had that honor and trust conferred upon him, when Sir *William Morice*, late Secretary of State, was by His Majesties gracious consent permitted to retire from business.

The King hath four Masters of Requests, who are at present,

- Colonel *Gervase Holles*.
- Sir *Thomas Beverly*.
- Sir *John Berkenhead*.
- Sir *Charles Cotterel*.

Clerks of the Council are,

- Sir *Richard Brown*.

O 3 Sir

Sir *Edward Walker.*
 Sir *John Nicholas.*
 Sir *Robert Southwell.*

Clerks of the Signet are,

Sir *Philip Warwick.*
 Sir *John Nicholas.*
Sidney Beare Esquire.
Trumbal Esquire.

The Keeper of the *Paper Office*,
 or Papers of State at *Whitehal*, is
 is that most ingenious and worthy
 person *Joseph Williamson* Doctor of
 Laws.

*Of the Military Government in
 the Kings Court.*

AS in a Kingdom, because Civil
 Governours proposing Tem-
 poral, and Ecclesiastical Governours
 Eternal Rewards and Punishments,
 are not sufficient to secure Peace;
 therefore

therefore a Military force is always
 in readines: So in the Kings Court
 besides Civil and Ecclesiastical Offi-
 cers, it is thought necessary alwayes
 to have in readines Military Offi-
 cers and Soldiers, to preserve the
 Kings Person; whereupon depends
 the Peace and Safety of all his sub-
 jects.

Belonging peculiarly to the Kings
 Court (besides above 4000 Foot.
 and above 500 Horse, who are al-
 ways in Pay and readines to assist
 upon any occasion) there are Guards
 of Horse and Foot.

The *Horse-Guard*, which the
 French call *Garde du Corps*, the
 Germans *Lieb Guard*, we corruptly
Life Guard, that is, *the Guard of
 the Kings Body*, hath consisted of
 500 Horsemen, all or most Gentle-
 men and old Officers, commanded
 by the Captain of the Guard, now
James Duke of Monmouth, whose
 Pay is 30 s. a day, and each Horse-
 man 4 s. a day: These Horse have
 been divided into Three parts,
 O 4 whereof

whereof 200 under the immediate Command of the Captain of the Guard, 150 under Monsieur le Marquis de Blancford, and 150 under Sir Philip Howard, whose Pay to each is 20s. a day.

Under the Captain of the Guard are four Lieutenants, Sir Thomas Sandis, Sir Gilbert Gerard, Major General Egerton, and Sir Geoge Hambleton, the Coronet is Mr. Stanly, Brother to the Earl of Derby; also a Quartermaster and four Brigadiers.

The Office of the Captain of the Life Guard is at all times of War or Peace to wait upon the Kings Person (as oft as he rides abroad) with a considerable number of Horsemen well armed and prepared against all dangers whatsoever?

At home within the Kings House it is thought fit that the Kings Person should have a Guard both above and below Stairs.

In

In the Presence Chamber therefore wait the Honourable Band of Gentlemen Pensioners, first instituted by King Hen. 7. and chosen usually in all times since out of the best and most antient Families of England, not only for a faithful Guard to the Kings Person, but to be as a Nursery to breed up hopeful Gentlemen, and fit them for Employments both Civil and Military, as well abroad as at home, as Deputies of Ireland, Ambassadors in Foreign Parts, Counsellors of Estate, Captains of the Guard, Governours of Places and Commanders in the Wars both by Land and Sea; of all which there have been examples, as George Lord Hunsdon Captain of the Pensioners at the death of Queen Elizabeth, intimated in a Letter to King James before he came into England.

Their Office is to attend the Kings Person to and from his Chapel, only as far as the Privy Chamber; also in all other Solemnities,

as Coronations, Publick Audience of Ambassadors, &c. They are 50 in number, over whom there is a Captain, usually some Peer of the Realm; a Lieutenant, a Standard-Bearer, and a Clerk of the Cheque, who are at present as followeth:

The Band of Gentlemen Pensioners.

John Lord Belafys Captain 360 l.
Sir John Bennet Knight of the Bath, Lieutenant 260 l. yearly.
Sir John Walpoole Knight, Standard-Bearer 200 l. yearly.
Tho. Wynne Esquire, Clerk of the Check 119 l. 1 s. 3 d. yearly.

John Dingley Esquire.
Edward Harbert Esquire.
Thomas Hayles Esquire.
William Sheldon Esquire.
Sir Thomas Rowe Knight.
Edward Brooks Esquire.
Sir Reginald Foster Baronet.
Richard Harrison Esquire.

John

John Rootes Esquire.
Sir George Courthop Knight.
Sir Philip Honeywood Knight.
Sir Richard Hatton Knight.
Sir Edward Alston Knight.
Charles Skrimsher Esquire.
William Comper Esquire.
Seafoule Gibson Esquire.
Sir George Tash Knight.
Charles Crompton Esquire.
John Raymond Esquire.
Sir Edmund Barker Knight.
Harbert Palmer Esquire.
Roger Coleman Esquire.
Anthony Gawdy Esquire.
Edward Coleman Esquire.
Fleetwood Dormer Esquire.
Brett Norton Esquire.
Sir John Rea Knight.
William Dikenson Esquire.
Allington Paineter Esquire.
John Freeman Esquire.
Hugh Tente Esquire.
John Kirke Esquire.
Brooke Estwicke Esquire.
Edward Alston Esquire.
Richard Fifield Esquire.

George

300 **The present State**

- George Farrington* Esquire.
- Sir Thomas Gery* Knight.
- Walter Rea* Esquire.
- William Forde* Esquire.
- Thomas Eyre* Esquire.
- Edward Games* Esquire.
- John Kirke* Junior Esquire.
- Richard Wigmore* Esquire.
- Robert Dacres* Esquire.
- Charles Radley* Esquire.
- Thomas Shotterden* Esquire.
- Roger Conysby* Esquire.
- Edward Cowper* Esquire.
- William Fairfax* Esquire.

The Fee to each of these is 100*l.* yearly.

Richard Child Gentleman Harbinger to provide Lodgings for them, his Fee 7*l.* 11*s.*

Ordinarily wait only one half of this Band, and by Quarter.

Upon extraordinary occasions all of them are summoned.

Their ordinary Arms are Gilt Pole-axes.

Their

of England.

Their Arms on Horsback in time of War, are Curassiers Arms with Sword and Pistol.

The Band of Pensioners is not under the Lord Chamberlain, but only under their own Officers, and are usually sworn by the Clerk of the Cheque, whose Office is to take notice of those that are absent when they should be upon their duty.

Their Standard born in time of War is, *A Cross Gules in a Field Argent*, also 4 *Bends*.

Again, In the first Room above Stairs, called the *Guard-Chamber*, attend the Yeomen of the Guard of His Majesties Body; whereof there was wont to be 250 men of the best quality under Gentry, and of larger stature than ordinary (for every one of them was to be 6 foot high.) There are at present 100 Yeomen in daily waiting, and 70 more not in waiting, and as any of the 100 shall die, his place to be filled up out of the 70. These wear *Scarlet Coats* down

down to the Knee, and Scarlet Breeches, both richly guarded with Black Velvet and rich Badges upon their Coats before and behind. Moreover Black Velvet round broad-crownd Caps (according to the mode used in the Reign of Hen. 8.) with Ribbons of the Kings colour: One half of them of late bear in their hands Harquebuzes and the other half Partisans, with large Swords by their sides. They have Wages and Diet allowed them. Their Office is to wait upon the King in his standing Houses, 40 by day and 20 to watch by night, and about the City to wait on the Kings person abroad by Water or Land.

The Captain of this Guard is at present *George Lord Vicount Grandison*, whose Fee is 1000 l. yearly.

Lieutenant is Coll. *Thomas Howard*, Fee 500 l.

Ensigne *Edward Sackville* Esquire, Fee 300 l.

Clerk

Clerk of the Cheque *Richard Smith*, Fee 150 l.

Four Corporals, Fee to each 150 l.

The Kings Palace Royal (*ratione Regie Dignitatis*) is exempted from all Jurisdiction of any Court Civil or Ecclesiastical, but onely to the Lord Steward, and in his absence to the Treasurer and Comptroller of the Kings Household, with the Steward of the *Marshalsey*, who may by vertue of their Office, without Commission hear and determine all Treasons, Felonies, Breaches of the Peace, committed within the Kings Court or Palace. The most excellent Orders and Rules for the demeanour and carriage of all Officers and Servants in the Kings Court are to be seen in several Tables hung up in several Rooms at the Court, and signed with the Kings own hand, and worthy to be read of all Strangers.

The

The Kings Court or House where the King resideth, is accounted a place so sacred, that if any man presume to strike another within the Palace where the Kings Royal Person resideth, and by such stroke only draw blood, his right hand shall be stricken off, and he committed to perpetual prison and fined. By the Antient Laws of England only striking in the Kings Court was punished with death and loss of goods.

To make the deeper impression and terrour into mens minds for striking in the Kings Court, it hath been ordered that the Punishment for striking should be executed with great Solemnity and Ceremony, in brief thus:

The Sergeant of the Kings Wood-yard brings to the place of Execution a square Block, a Beetle, Staple, and Cords to fasten the hand thereto, the Yeoman of the Scullery provides a great fire of Coals by the Block, wherein the Searing Irons brought by the Chief Farrier, are to be

be ready for the Chief Surgeon to use. Vinegar and Cold Water brought by the Groom of the Saucery; the Chief Officers also of the Cellar and Pantry are to be ready, one with a Cup of Red Wine, and the other with a Manchet, to offer the Criminal after the Hand cut off and the stump seared; the Sergeant of the Ewry is to bring Linnen to wind about and wrap the Arm. The Yeoman of the Poultry a Cock to lay to it, the Yeoman of the Chandry seared Clothes, the Master Cook a sharp Dresser Knife, which at the place of Execution is to be held upright by the Sergeant of the Larder, till Execution be performed by an Officer appointed thereto, &c. After all he shall be imprisoned during life, and Fine and Ransome at the Kings Will.

In the Kings Court not only striking is forbidden, but also all occasions of striking, and therefore the Law saith, *Nullas Citationes aut summonitiones licet facere infra Palatium*

tium Regis apud Westm. vel alibi ubi Rex residet.

The Court of the King of England for Magnificence, for Order, for Number and Quality of Officers, for rich Furniture, for Entertainment and Civility to strangers, for plentiful Tables; might compare with the best Court of *Christendom*, and far excel the most Courts abroad; of one whereof see the Description made by an ingenious Person beyond Sea, writing to a Friend of his at Court there, *Annon in inferno es Amice, qui es in Aula ubi Dæmonum habitatio est, qui illic suis artibus, (humana licet effigie) regnant, atque ubi Scelerum Schola est, & Animarum jactura ingens, ac quicquid aspiciam est perfidia ac doli, quicquid crudelitatis ac inclementia, quicquid effrenatae superbiae & rapacis avaritia, quicquid obscena libidinis ac foedissima impudicitia, quicquid nefanda impietatis & morum pessimorum, totum illic acervatur cumulatiflime, ubi stupra, raptus, incestus, adulteria; ubi*

inebri-

inebriari, jurare, pejerare, Atheismum profiteri palam principum & nobilium ludi sunt, ubi fastus & tumor, ira, Livor, sedaque cupido cum sociis suis imperare videtur, ubi criminum omnium procella, virtutumque omnium inenarrabile naufragium, &c.

But the Court of England on the contrary hath been (and is hoped ever will be) accounted (as King James adviseth in his *Basilicon Doron*) a *Pattern of Godliness* and all *Honesty* and *Vertue*; and the properest School of *Prowess* and *Heroick Demeanour*, and the fittest Place of *Education* for the *Nobility* and *Gentry*.

The Court of England hath for a long time been a *Pattern* of *Hospitality* to the *Nobility* and *Gentry* of England. All Noblemen or Gentlemen, Subjects or Strangers that came accidentally to Court, were freely entertained at the plentiful Tables of His Majesties Officers. Divers Services or Messes of Meat were every day provided Extraordinary for

for the Kings Honour. Two hundred and forty Gallons of Beer a day were at the Buttry Barr allowed for the Poor, besides all the broken Meat, Bread, &c. gathered into Baskets and given to the Poor at the Court Gates by two Grooms and two Yeomen of the Almonry, who have Salaries of His Majesty for that Service.

The Magnificent and abundant plenty of the Kings Tables hath caused amazement in Forreigners, when they have been informed that in the last Kings Reign before the troubles, there were daily in his Court 86 Tables well furnisht each Meal, whereof the Kings Table had 28 Dishes, the Queens 24; Four other Tables 16 Dishes each; Three other 10 Dishes each; Twelve other had 7 Dishes each; Seventeen other Tables had each of them 5 Dishes; Three other had 4 each; Thirty two other Tables had each 3 Dishes, and Thirteen other had each

each 2 Dishes: In all about Five hundred Dishes each Meal, with Bread, Beer, Wine, and all other things necessary. All which was provided most by the severall Purveyors, who by Commissions legally and regularly authoris'd, did receive those Provisions at a moderate price, such as had been formerly agreed upon in the severall Counties of *England*, which price (by reason of the value of Money, much altered) was become low, yet a very inconsiderable burthen to the Kingdom in General, but thereby was greatly supported the Dignity Royal in the eyes of Strangers as well as Subjects. The English Nobility and Gentry, according to the Kings Example were incited to keep a proportionable Hospitality in their severall Country Mansions, the Husbandman encouraged to breed Cattel, all Tradesmen to a cheerful industry, and there was then a free circulation of Moneys through the whole

310 **The present State**

whole body of the Kingdome. There was spent yearly in the Kings House of gros Meat 1500 Oxen, 7000 Sheep, 1200 Veals, 300 Porkers, 400 Sturks or young Beefs, 6800 Lambs, 300 Fitches of Bacon, and 26 Boars: Also 140 dozen of Geese, 250 dozen of Capons, 470 dozen of Hens, 750 dozen of Pullets, 1470 dozen of Chicken. For Bread 36400 Bushels of Wheat, and for Drink 600 Tun of Wine, and 1700 Tun of Beer. Moreover of Butter 46640 pounds, together with Fish and Fowl, Venison, Fruit, Spice, proportionable. This prodigious plenty in the Kings Court, caused Forreigners to put a higher value upon the King, and caused the Natives who were there freely welcome (for by order of the Kings House, some of his Officers went daily to *Westminster Hall* in Term time, between Eleven and Twelve a Clock, to invite Gentlemen to eat of the Kings *Acates*, and in Parlia-

of England.

311

Parliament time to invite the Parliament men) to encrease their affection to the King, it being found as necessary for the King of *England* this way to endear the English, who ever delighted in Feasting; as for the Italian Princes by sights and shews to endear their Subjects; who as much delight therein.

Moreover the Court is an eminent *Pattern of Charity and Humility* to all that shall see the performance of that Ancient Custom by the King and the Queen on the Thursday before *Easter*, called *Maundy Thursday*, wherein the King in a Solemn manner doth wash the Feet, cloth and feed as many poor old men as His Majesty is years old, bestowing on every one Cloth for a Gown, Linnen for a Shirt, Shooes, and Stockings, a Joul of Salmon, a Poll of Ling, 30 Red and 30 White Herrings, all in clean Wooden Dishes, 4 Six penny Loaves of Bread, and a Purse with a 20s. piece of Gold. The

The Queen also doth the like to divers poor women.

CHAP. XIV.

of the Queen Consorts Court.

The Queens Court, suitable to the Consort of so great a King, is Splendid and Magnificent.

Her Majesty hath all Officers and a Household apart from the King; for the maintenance whereof there is settled 40000 l. per annum.

For the Ecclesiastique Government of her Court, there is first the Grand Almoner, Lord Philip Howard, Brother to the Duke of Norfolk.

He hath the superintendency over all the Ecclesiastiques belonging to the Queen.

Father Antonio Fernandez is Her Majesties Confessor.

Bishop Russel Almoner.

Father

Father Patrick Almoner.

Father Paul de Almeida Almoner.

Father Manoel Pereira Alm.

Doctor Thomas Gadden Treasurer of the Chappel.

2 Other Preachers Portuguez; Father Master Christopher del Rosario a Dominican; and Father Antonio a Franciscan.

5 Clerks of the Chappel.

6 English Fathers Benedictins, Chaplains:

11 Franciscan Friers, Chaplains.

Divers Persons belonging to the Musick of the Chappel, to serve at the Altars, two Porters, &c.

For the Civil Government of her Majesties Court, there is a Council consisting of Persons of great worth and dignity.

Lord Keeper.

Earl of Manchester.

Earl of Chesterfield.

Earl of Sandwich.

Lord Holles Steward of the Revenue.

P

Lord

314 **The present State**

Lord Vicount *Brounker* Chancellor
and Keeper of her Majesties
Great Seal.

Lord Vicount *Cornbury* Chamber-
lain.

Lord *Arlington*.

Lord *Ashley*.

Lord *Baltamore*.

Sir *Thomas Clifford*.

Sir *John Trevor*.

Sir *Thomas Ingram*.

Sir *John Duncomb*.

Ralph Montague Esquire, Master
of the Horse.

George Montague Esquire.

Sir *William Killegrew* Knight, Vice-
chamberlain.

Sir *Geoffry Palmer*.

Sir *Heneage Finch*.

Sir *Richard Bellings* Principal Se-
cretary and Master of Requests.

John Harvey Esquire, Treasurer and
Receiver General.

William Montague Esquire, Attor-
ney General.

Sir *Robert Long* Knight and Baronet.

Sir *Charles Harbort*.

Sir

of England.

Sir *Henry Wood*.

Sir *Robert Atkins* Knight of the
Bath, Sollicitor General.

Sir *John Arundel* Knight.

John Hall Esquire, Surveyor Ge-
neral.

Francis Slingsby Esquire.

Henry Slingsby Esquire.

*Gentlemen Ushers of the Privy-
Chamber.*

Sir *Hugh Chomley* Baronet.

George Porter Esquire.

Alexander Stanhope Esquire.

Francis Roper, Esquire.

John Hall, Esquire.

Cup-Bearers.

Sir *Nicholas Slaving* Knight of the
Bath.

Henry Guy Esquire.

Carvers.

Sir *Gabriel de Sylvis* Knight.

Sir *John Elwes* Knight

P 2

Sewers.

Sewers.
Sir Charles Windham, Knight.
John Griffith Esquire.

Five Gentlemen Ushers daily waiters.

Ten Grooms of the Privy-Chamber.

Seven Gentlemen Ushers Quarter waiters.

Apothecary, Chirurgion.
Six Pages of the Bed-Chamber attending at the Back-Stairs.
Four Pages of the Presence.

Officers belonging to the Robes.
A Surveyor, Prov-ditor, Clerk, Yeoman, Groom, Page, Taylor, and Brusher.

Twelve Grooms of the Great Chamber.
One Porter of the Back-Stairs.

A

A Master of the Queens Barge, and 24 Watermen,
Groom of the *Stole*, Lady of the Robes and of the Privy-Purse, is the Countess of *Suffolk*.

Seven other Ladies of the Bed-Chamber, *viz.* Dutcheſs of *Buckingham*, Dutcheſs Dowager of *Richmond*, Counteſs of *Bath*, Counteſs of *Castlemain*, Counteſs of *Falmouth*, Lady *Marshal*, and Lady *Gerard*.

Mrs *Charlotte Killegrew* Keeper of the Sweet Coffers.

Six Maids of Honour.

These are to be all Gentlewomen unmarried, over whom is placed a Governesſ called the Mother of the Maids; who is the Lady *Sanderson*.

There are also 6 Chambriers or Dressers.

Lady *Scroop*, who is also Madam Nurse, Lady *Killegrew*, Lady *Fra-*

P 3 ser,

318 The present State

ser, Lady de Sylvis, Mrs Thornhil, and Lady Clinton.

A Laundress, a Semstres, a Starcher, a Necessary Woman.

These are all paid by Her Majesty, out of Her own Revenue.

There are besides divers Officers below Stairs and belonging to Her Majesties Table and Stable paid by the King, for which there is allowed Twenty thousand pounds more.

CHAP. XV.

of the Queen Mothers Court.

The highest Office in Her Majesties Court was that of Lord Chamberlain and Steward of Her Majesties Revenue, lately enjoyed by Henry Lord Germain Earl of St. Albans, whose Salary is and a Table of Dishes.

Mon-

of England.

Monfieur Vantelet Vice-Chamberlain, whose salary was 200 l. per annum.

The third place was her Majesties Chancellour, enjoyed by Sir J. Winter, Sir Henry Wood, and Sir Robert Long; whose salary was and a Table of Dishes.

The next was the Lord Arundel of Warder, and Count of the Empire, Master of the Horse, whose salary was

Then her Majesties Secretary Sir John Winter.

The Treasurer, Receiver General of Her Majesties Revenues, Sir Henry Wood.

Sir Thomas Bond Comptroller of the Houshold, whose salary was

Sir Thomas Ork and divers other Officers of the Robes.

Four Gentlemen Ushers of the Privy Chamber, to each of which was 130 l. salary per annum, and Diet.

Two Cupbearers, two Carvers, two Sewers, two Gentlemen Ushers

P 4 of

320 **The present State**

of the Presence Chamber; Salary to each 120*l.* and diet all these at a table together.

Four Grooms of the Privy Chamber, salary 60*l.* and diet.

Four Gentlemen Ushers Quarter Waiters, salary 60*l.* and diet.

Four Pages of the Presence.

Eight Grooms of the Great Chamber.

For Guarding Her Majesties Person, she had first a Captain of her Guard, the Earl of St. Albans.

A Lieutenant, Monsieur de la Chapelle.

An Exempt of the Guards, Monsieur Fremon.

24 Gentlemen Soldiers in Black Velvet Cassocks and Golden embroidered Badges, marching or waiting about the person of her Majesty (when in Sedan, or at Chapel or Table, or Coach with two Horses) on foot with Halberts; and when in Coach and 6 Horses, on Horseback with Carabins; in all places

of England.

places within doors as without, covered.

For to take care of Her Majesties Health, There was one Physitian and one Apothecary.

For to wait on Her Majesty in her Bed-Chamber, There were first the Ladies of the Bed-Chamber; the chief whereof was,

The Dutchess Dowager of Richmond, Sister to the present Duke of Buckingham, who was Groom of the Stole.

And the Countess of Newport Lady of the Chamber.

*Of the Privy Chamber there were 4 Ladies all English, Fee 150*l.* each one; they lately were the Lady Price, the Lady Bond, &c.*

Women of the Bed-Chamber 8 or 9, partly French, and partly English.

In the Laundry, The Lady Sanderson was the Chief Laundress.

1 Seamstres.

1 Starcher.

In the Stable, The Chief Query or Escuyer was Sir Edward Wingfield.

The many Officers in the Buttry, Cellar, Pantry, Ewry, &c. shall be for brevity passed over.

Her Majesty had also 4 Coaches with 6 Horses each, also 12 Footmen, a Barge with 12 men in Liveries: Moreover Pages of the Back Stairs 4, &c.

In the Chappel.

There was first the Lord Almoner Abbot *Montague*, 800 *l. per annum.*

Father *Lambart* Confessor to Her Majesty, a Frenchman, 300 *l. per annum.*

Father

Father *Gough* Priest of the Oratory, Clerk of Her Majesties Private Chappel, and Assistant to the Confessor an Englishman, 200 *per annum.*

A Lay Brother of the Oratory, 40 *l.*

Besides these there was adjoining to the Chappel a Convent of Capuchins, wherein was a Father Guardian, 7 other Priests and two Lay Brothers all French; whose Office was to perform the Office of the Chappel daily, also to Preach on Sundayes and Holy-dayes, and in *Lent* three dayes every week; for the maintenance of these Her Majesty allowed 500 *l. per annum.*

Her Majesties Revenue was for her Joynture 30000 *l. yearly*, and of His Majesty a Pension of 30000 *l.* more out of the *Exchequer.*

Divers other Offices belonging to Her Majesties Court, as Master of Buck-

Buck-Hounds, and Bows and Mu-
fick.

Master of the Queens Games.

CHAP XVI.

of the Duke of York's Court.

Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber
and Groom of the Stole the
Earl of Peterborough.

Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber,
the Lord Hawley.

Treasurer of the Household, Sir
Alan Apsty, his Fee 400 Marks, or
266 l. 13 s. 4 d.

Comptroller, Sir Jonathan Tre-
ny, 266 l. 13 s. 4 d.

Secretary, Matthew Wren Esquire,
200 l.

Keeper of the Privy Purse, Mar-
quifs de Blanquesfort, 100 l.

Master of the Robes and Groom
of the Bed-Chamber, Edward Vil-
liers Esquire, 266 l. 13 s. 4 d.

Six

Six other Grooms of the
Bed-Chamber.

Richard Nicols,
Robert Worden,
Richard Talbott,
Henry Savile,
Roger Vaughan, } each 200 l.
Henry Howard,
Thomas Thynn, late
Envoy Extraordi-
nary in Swethland. }

Belonging to His Royal
Highnesss Chappel.

Almoner Doctor Henry Kille-
grew, 100 l.

Five Chaplains.

Dr. William Clark,

Dr. William Thomas,

Dr. Richard Watson,

Dr. Turner,

Mr. Doughty, 50 l.

Sacristan, 40 l.

Keeper of the Closet, 40 l.

Gentle-

326 **The present State**

Gentleman-Usher, 80 l.
Four Gentlemen Waiters, each
40 l.

Yeoman of the Robes, Mr *Law-
rence du Puy*, 60 l.
Brusher, 40 l.
Yeoman of the Wardrobe, *Phi-
lip Kinnersty*, 80 l.
Two Barbers, each 80 l.

Four Pages of the Back-stairs,
each 80 l.
One Groom of the Privy-Cham-
ber,
One Groom of the Presence,
A Fire-maker in the Presence,

One Physitian, Sir *Charles Scar-
borough*, 200 l.
One Chirurgeon.
One Apothecary.
A Secretary of the Languages,
100 l.
A Gentleman-Harbinger, 50 l.
besides Riding-Charges, 8 s. 4 d.
per diem.

Semstres

of England.

327

Semstres and Laundres to the
Body, Mrs *du Puy*, 250 l.
Laundres to the Table, Mrs *Ka-
therine Atkinson*, 150 l.

Yeoman of the Wine Cellar, Mr
Jenks 50 l.
Yeoman of the Beer Cellar, Mr
Pierce, 40 l.

Yeoman of the Poultry and Lar-
der, 30 l.

Yeoman of the Woodyard and
Scullery, 30 l.

Of the Pantry and Ewry 30 l.

Porter, 50 l.

Keeper of the Armory, 50 l.

Trumpeter, 30 l.

Necessary Woman, 40 l.

Chamber-Keeper to the Maids,
10 l.

Bottleman.

One Clerk to the Commissio-
ners, 50 l.

Messenger to the Commissio-
ners, 71 l. 18 s. 4 d.

Door-

328 **The present State**

Door-Keeper to the Commissioners,

Clerk of the Kitchen, 50*l.*
Master Cook, 40*l.*
Second Cook, 30*l.*
Three Turn-broaches, each 18*l.*

5*s.*
One Scowrer, each 18*l.* 5*s.*
Pan-keeper,
Porter of the Kitchen,
Cole-Carrier,
Porter at *Whitehall*,
Gardiner,

*Officers of His Highnesses
Revenue.*

Treasurer of the Revenue, Sir
Alan Apsley.
Attorney General, Sir *Edward
Turner* 40*l.*
Sollicitor General, Sir *Edward
Thurland*, 40*l.*
Sollicitor, *Charles Porter* Esquire,
40*l.*

Auditor

of England.

329

Auditor General, *Thomas Holder*
Esquire, 180*l.*

Assitant to the Auditor *M.
Broad.*

Messenger to the Revenue, Mr.
Dutton, 71*l.* 18*s.* 4*d.*

Officers of the Admiralty.

Sir *William Turner.*
Mr. *David Bud.*

Master of the Buckhounds, Mr.
Walsingham, 500*l.*

Three Huntsmen of the Buck-
hounds.

Four Huntsmen of the Fox-
hounds.

Teacher of the Setting-Dogs.
Master of the Barges, 50*l.*
Twenty four Watermen.
Pensioners.

Officers

Officers and Servants in his Highnesses Stable.

Henry Fermin Esquire, Master of the Horse, 266 l. 13 s. 4 d.

Two Escuyries, each 100 l.

Clerk of the Stables, 60 l.

Surveyor of the Stable, 40 l.

Yeoman Rider, 80 l.

Two Pages of honour, each 100 l.

Fourteen Foot-men, each 39 l.

Fifteen Grooms, each 32 l. 10 s.

Three Coachmen, each 78 l. for themselves, 3 Postillions, and 3 Helpers, Besides Linnen, Stockings, and Liveries twice a year.

Two Sumpter-men, each 26 l.

Three Muleteers, each 26 l.

Porter of the Stables, 32 l. 10 s.

Officers

Officers and Servants belonging to Her Royal Highness the Dutchess.

Room of the Stole, Countess of Rochester, 400 l.
Lady of the Bed-Chamber, Countess of Peterborough, 200 l.

Four Maids of Honour.

Mrs *Arabel Churchil*, 20 l.

Mrs *Dorothy Howard*, 20 l.

Mrs *Anne Ogle*, 20 l.

Mrs *Mary Blague*, 20 l.

Mother of the Maids, Mrs *Lucy Wise*.

Four Bed-Chamber-Women.

Mrs *Katherine Eliot*, 200 l.

Mrs *Margaret Dawson*, 150 l.

Mrs. *Lelis Cranmer*, 150 l.

Lady *Apsley*, 150 l.

Starcher, Mrs *Mary Roche*, 50 l.

Semstres, Mrs *Ellen Green*, 50 l.

Laundress,

332 **The present State**

Laundress, Mrs. *Mary Cowdre*,
250*l.*

Lace Mender,

Secretary to her Highness, Sir
Phil. Froud, 100*l.*

Two Gentlemen Ushers, each
80*l.*

Four Gentlemen Waiters,
Four Pages of the Back-stairs,
each 40*l.*

Master Cook, 40*l.*

Necessary Woman, 40*l.*

Eighteen Watermen, each 2*l.*

Master of the Horse to the Dur-
chefs; is Sir *Richard Powle*, 266*l.*
13*s.* 4*d.*

Two Escuyries, each 100*l.*

Eight Footmen, each 39*l.*

Four Coachmen, each 78*l.* for
themselves, Postillions, and Help-
ers.

Five Grooms, each 32*l.* 10*s.*

Two Chairmen, each 39*l.*

Officers

of England.

333

*Officers and Servants to the
Duke of Cambridge.*

Governess, Lady *Francis Vil-*
liers, 400*l.*

Under-Governess, Mrs. *Mary*
Kilbert, 150*l.*

Wet Nurse, 80*l.*

Dry Nurse, 80*l.*

Tutor of the French Tongue,
Monsieur *Lesne*, 100*l.*

Three Rockers, each 70*l.*

Laundress to the Body, 60*l.*

Semstres,

Laundress to the Table,

Page of the Back-stairs, 60*l.*

Necessary Woman, 40*l.*

Cook 38*l.* 5*s.*

Musitian 31*l.* 4*s.*

Four Footmen,

One Groom,

One Coachman, Postillion, and
Helper.

Officers

*Officers and Servants belonging
to the Lady Mary.*

Two Dressers,
Mrs Anne Walsingham, 80*l.*
Mrs Mary Langford, 80*l.*

Rocker, Mrs Jane Leigh 70*l.*
Semstrefs,
Laundrefs, Mrs Elizabeth Brooks,
90*l.*

Page of the Back-stairs, 60*l.*
Dancing-Master, 200*l.*
Singing-Master, 100*l.*

Servants

Servants to the Lady Anne.

Dresser,
Three Rockers,
Semstrefs,
Page of the Back-stairs,
Necessary Woman,

His Royal Highness upon all
occasions when he goes abroad
without the King, hath for his par-
ticular Guard a Gallant Troop of
Horse, commanded by Monsieur
de Blancfort.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Of the Three States of England, and first of the Clergy, and therein of their Dignity, Name, Degrees, &c.

*Clergy
their
Dignity.*

All the subjects of *England* are divided into *Clergy* and *Laity*; The *Laity* sub-divided into *Nobility* and *Commonalty*. These are called *Ordines Regni*, or the *Three States*, and first of the *Clergy*.

As *Heaven* is more honourable than *Earth*, the *Soul* than the *Body*; so is the *Spiritual Function* more excellent than the *Civil*, and the *Sacerdotal Dignity* higher than the *Secular*: and therefore in *England* the *Clergy ceteris paribus*, hath ever had (according to the practice of all other *Civilized Nations* since the

the *World* began) the preference and precedence of the *Dignity*; and hath in all times been reputed the First of the *Three States*.

The *Clergy* so called, because *names* they are *Gods* *Knights* or *Portion*: For although all *Christians* may be stiled *Gods* *Portion* as well as *Gods* *servants*; yet amongst *Christians* those *Persons* whom *God* hath set apart, and separated from common use to his *Service*, to be as it were his *Domestick* *servants*; are more peculiarly the *Lords* *Portion*; and therefore from the first *Age* of *Christianity*, the *Persons* so set apart, have been called *Clerici*, *Clerks*.

As in the *State*, so in the *Church*, *Dignities* the *Laws* and *Constitutions* of *England* would not that there should be a *parity* and *equality* of all *persons*. *Quippe in Ecclesia nihil magis inaequale quam aequalitas*. And therefore in conformity to the first

Q Times

338 The present State

Bishop. Times and Places of Establisht Christianity, so soon as the Christian Faith was by Authority received in England, one of the Clergy was in every City ordained a Bishop; who hath (to avoid Confusion, which usually springs from equality) a pre-eminence over the rest of the Clergy within certain Precincts.

Afterwards the Bishops being necessitated to meet about Publick Affairs of the Church, as Consecrations, Consultations for remedy of general disorders, for Audiences Judicial, when the actions of any Bishop should be called in question; or Appeals from Bishops, &c. It seem'd requisite to our Ancestors (according to other Christian Churches (ever since the first Nicene Council) to have amongst a certain number of Bishops, one to be chiefest in Authority over the rest; from thence named *Archiepiscopus*, Arch or Chief Bishop.

Archbishop. For easing the Bishop of some part of his burthen, as the number of

of England.

of Christians waxed great, or the Diocess was large, there were ordained in the Primitive Times *Chorepiscopi*, *Suffragan*, or *Subsidiary Suffragan Bishops*. Accordingly in the English Church of a long time there have been such ordained by the name of Bishops *Suffragans* or *Titular Bishops*; who have the Name, Title, Stile, and Dignity of Bishops, and (as other Bishops) are consecrated by the Arch-bishop of the Province; each one to execute such Power, Jurisdiction, and Authority, and receive such Profits as is limited in his Commission by the Bishop or Diocesan, whose Suffragan he is.

Suffragan Bishops by an Act of Parliament of H. 8. still in force, are to be only of these Towns following.

The *Suffragan Bishop* for the Diocess of *Canterbury* must be at *Dover* only, for *York* at *Nottingham* and *Hull*, for *London* at *Colchester*, for *Durham* at *Berwick*, for *Winchester* at *Guilford*, *Southampton*, and

Q 2 the

340 The present State

the Isle of *Wight*; for *Lincoln* at *Bedford*, *Leicester*, *Grantham*, and *Huntingdon*; for *Normich*, at *Thetford* and *Ipswich*; for *Salisbury* at *Shaftsbury*, *Melton*, and *Marleborough*; for *Bath* and *Wells* at *Taunton*; for *Hereford*, *Bridgenorth*; for *Coventry* and *Lichfield*, *Shrewsbury*; for *Ely* at *Cambridge*; for *Exeter* at *St. Germans*; for *Carlisle* at *Perith*. These only to be the Sees of Bishops Suffragans, and no more Suffragans allowed, then so many to each Diocess, as above-mentioned. In Publick Assemblies they were to take place next after the temporal Peers of the Realm. In the absence of the Bishops, employed oft upon Embassies abroad, or residing at Court to advise the King, these did usually supply their places. A Suffragan Bishop is made, in case the Archbishop or some other Bishop, for the better Government of his Diocess, desire the same; and in such case the Bishop is to present two able men for any one place afore-named,

of England.

341

named, whereof His Majesty chuseth one.

For a supply of able and fit Persons to assist Bishops, or to be made Bishops, it seemed good to Reverend Antiquity, that in every Diocess a certain number of the more prudent and pious Pastors should be placed in a Collegiate manner at every Cathedral or Episcopal See; where they might not only be ready to assist the Bishop in certain weighty Cases; but also fit themselves (by gaining experience and losing by little and little their former familiarity with the inferiour Countrey Clergy) for Government and Authority in the Church.

Accordingly in every Cathedral Church in England, there are a certain number of Prebendaries or Canons, and over them a Dean; in Latine *Decanus*, from *deka*; because antiently set over ten Canons at the least: who is sometimes stiled *Alter Episcopi Oculus*, the other being the Archdeacon, who (though a Presbyter-deacon.

342 The present State

byter himself) is so named for his Charge over the *Deacons*; who are to be guided and directed by him under the Bishop.

Next is the *Rural Dean*, who was antiently called *Archipresbyter*, and had the guidance and direction of the *Presbyters*.

In the last place are the Pastors of every Parish, who are called *Rectors*, unless the *Predial Tythes* be *impropriated*, and then they are called *Vicars*, *quasi vice fungentes Rectorum*.

In England are 2 *Archbishopricks*, 24 *Bishops*, no *Suffragan Bishops* at present, 26 *Deans* of Cathedrals and Collegiate Churches, 60 *Archdeacons*, 544 *Prebendaries*, many *Rural Deans*: and about 9700 *Rectors* and *Vicars*, besides *Curates*, who for certain *Stipends* assist such *Rectors* and *Vicars* that have the care of more Churches than one.

These (if it be considered of what great Learning and Abilities they are; what great Authority and

Sway

of England.

Sway they usually bear over the Laity to incline, lead, and draw them; what great Priviledges and Immunities they do or ought to enjoy, and how much means they possess) may well be reputed the first Member of the Three Estates of England.

It hath been provided, not without singular wisdom, that as the ordinary course of common affairs is disposed of by general Laws; so likewise rarer incident Necessities and Utilities should be with special equity considered. Hence is it that so many *Priviledges*, *Immunities*, *Exemptions*, and *Dispensations*, have been to the Clergy of England granted in all times: Our Ancestors thinking it very reasonable that as *Soldiers* were wont by the *Roman Emperors* to be endowed with certain *Priviledges* for their warding and fighting to preserve the State from *external Enemies*. so the Clergy ought to have certain

Q 4

Im.

344 **The present State**

Immunities and Priviledges for their watching and spiritual warfare to preserve the State from *internal* Enemies, the *World*, the *Flesh*, and the *Devil*; *Ut serventur immunes Clerici, quo Castris suis sedulo commorantes, & vigiles excubias ducentes summo caeli Imperatori illas populos representent, Legibus effectum est, ut quam plurima iis Privilegia concessa sint, tum ad eorum personas tum bona ac res spectantia.*

Of Priviledges, some belong to *Archbishops*, some to *Bishops*, as they are so, and some belong to them and to the inferiour Clergy, as they are *Ecclesiastiques* or *Churchmen*.

Arch-
Bishop.

Before the coming of the *Saxons* into *England*, the *Christian Britains* had 3 *Archbishops*, viz. of *London*, *York* and *Caerleon* an antient great City of *South-Wales* upon the River *Uske* (as afore-mentioned.) Afterward the *Archiepiscopal See* of

of England.

345

of *London* was by the *Saxons* placed at *Canterbury*, for the sake of *St. Austin* the Monk, who first preached the Gospel there to the *Heathen Saxons*, and was there buried. The other of *Caerleon* was translated to *St. Davids* in *Pembroke-shire*, and afterward subjected wholly to the See of *Canterbury*, since which all *England* and *Wales* reckon but two *Archbishops*, *Canterbury* and *York*.

The *Archbishop* of *Canterbury* antiently had *Primacy* as well over all *Ireland* as *England*, and the *Irish Bishops* received their *Consecrations* from him; for *Ireland* had no other *Archbishop* until the year 1152, and therefore in the time of the 2 first *Norman Kings* it was declared that *Canterbury* was the *Metropolitan Church* of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, and the *Isles* adjacent. He was therefore sometimes stiled a *Patriarch* (and *Patriarcha* was a Chief Bishop over several

Q5 ral

346 The present State

ral Kingdoms or Provinces (as an Archbishop is over several Dioceses) and had several Archbishops under him; was sometimes called, *Alterius Orbis Papa & Orbis Britannici Pontifex*; and matters done and recorded in Ecclesiastical affairs, can thus, *Anno Pontificatus Nostri primo, secundo, &c.* He was *Legatus Natus*, that is a perpetual *Legantine* Power was annexed to that Archbishoprick near 1000 years ago; whereby no other *Legat*, *Nuncio*, or *Ambassadour* from the Bishop of *Rome*, could here exercise any *Legantine* Power without special Licence from the King. He was so highly respected abroad, that in General Councils he was placed before all other Archbishops at the Popes right Foot. He was at home so highly honoured by the King of *England*, (that according to the Practice of Gods own People the Jews, where *Aaron* was next in Dignity to *Moses*, and according to the practice of most other *Christian*

of England.

347

stian States; where the next in Dignity and Authority to the Sovereign, is usually the chiefest Person of the Clergy) he was accounted the second Person in the Kingdom, and named and ranked even before the *Princes of the Blood*. He enjoyed some special marks of *Royalty*, as to be *Patron* of a *Bishoprick* (as he was of *Rocheſter*;) to *Coin Money*, to make *Knights*, and to have the *Wardships* of all those who held Lands of him *Jure Homini* (as it is called) although they held in *Capite* other Lands of the King; a *Princely* Prerogative, even against the Kings written Prerogative.

In an antient *Charter* granted by *William the Conquerour* to *Lanfranc* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, he is to hold his Lands with the same freedom *in Dominico suo* (as the words are) as the King holdeth his *in Dominico suo* except only in 2 or 3 Cases, and those of no great importance.

It

348 **The present State**

It is an Antient Priviledge of the See of *Canterbury*, that wheresoever any Mannors or Advowsons do belong unto that See, that place forthwith becomes exempt from the Ordinary, and is reputed a Peculiar, and of the Diocess of *Canterbury*.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* by the favour of our King is judged fit to enjoy still divers considerable Pre-eminencies. He is *Primat* over all *England* and *Metropolitan*, hath a super-eminency and some Power even over the Archbishop of *York*; hath power to summon him to a National Synod, and *Archiepif. Eboracensis venire debet cum Episcopis suis, ad nutum ejus, ut ejus Canonice dispositionibus obediens existat.*

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* is at this day *Primus par Regni*, the first *Peer* of *England*, and next to the Royal Family to precede not only all *Dukes*, but all the *Great Officers* of the Crown.

At

of England.

349

At the late solemn Coronation of our present Sovereign, it was expressly ordered in doing homage to the King, that according to antient Custom, the *Archbishops* and *Bishops* should precede even the Duke of *York* and all the Lay Lords.

He is stiled by the King in his Writs directed to him, *Dei Gratia Archiepisc. Cant.* and writes himself *Divina Providentia*, whereas other Bishops write, *Divina Permissione*; and he is said to be *introned*, when he is invested in the Archbishoprick.

To crown the King belongs to him, and it hath been resolved, that wheresoever the Court shall happen to be, the King and Queen are *Speciales Domestici Parochiani Domini Ar. Cant.* and had antiently the *Holy Offerings* made at the Altar by the King and Queen, wheresoever the Court should happen to be, if his Grace was there present, also the Power of appointing the *Lent Preachers*, which was thought by

350 The present State

by our Ancestors much more fit for a Prelate or Spiritual Person to do (as in all other Christian Courts) then for any Lay Lord, as hath been used in England, since one Cromwell was by Hen. 8. made Vicar General, and placed above the Archbishop of Canterbury.

The Bishop of London is accounted his Provincial Dean, the Bishop of Winchester his Chancelour, and the Bishop of Rochester his Chaplain.

In writing and speaking to him is given the Title of Grace (as it is to all Dukes) and Most Reverend Father in God.

He hath the Power of all Probate of Testaments, and granting Letters of Administration, where the party dying had Bona Notabilia, that is five pounds worth or above, out of the Diocess wherein he died; or ten pounds worth within the Diocess of London; or if the party dying be a Bishop, though he hath no Goods out of the Diocess where he died.

of England.

died. Also to make Wills for all such as die intestate within his Province, and to administer their Goods to the Kindred or to Pious uses, according to his discretion; which most transcendent Trust and Power is so antiently in England belonging to Bishops, that the best Antiquary cannot find the first Original thereof.

By Stat. 25 H. 8. he hath the Honour and Power to grant Licences and Dispensations in all Cases heretofore sued for in the Court of Rome, not repugnant to the Law of God or the Kings Prerogative: As to allow a Clerk to hold a Benefice in Commendam or Trust; to allow a Son (contrary to the Canons) to succeed his Father immediately in a Benefice; to allow a Clerk rightly qualified to hold two Benefices with Cure of Souls; to abolish irregularity gotten without a mans own default, as by defect of Body or Birth, or by accidental killing of a Man, &c. to abolish the guilt of Simony;

Simony; to allow a Beneficed Clerk for some certain causes to be *Non-Resident* for some time; to allow a Layman to hold a Prebend, &c. whilst by study he is preparing himself for the service of the Church; to grant Dispensations to sick, to old People, to Women with Child, to eat flesh on days whereon it was forbidden; to constitute Publick Notaries, whose single Testimony is as good as the Testimonies of any two other Persons. All which forementioned *Licences, Dispensations, &c.* the said Archbishop grants by himself, or by his Deputy, called the *Master of Faculties*, in all his Majesties Dominions except *Scotland*; for all the new late Acquisitions to this Crown, as *Virginia, New England, Barbados, Bermudos, &c.* were heretofore added by due Authority to the Province of *Canterbury*, and put under the Diocess of *London*. He hath also the Power to grant *Literas Tutorias*, whereby any one that brings his Appeal,

may

may prosecute the same without any molestation; to bestow one dignity or Prebend in any Cathedral Church within his Province upon every Creation there of a new Bishop; who is also to provide a sufficient Benefice for one of the Chaplains of the Archbishop, or to maintain him till it be effected.

By the Stat. *Primo Eliz.* it is provided that the Queen by the Advice of the Archbishop might ordain and publish such Rites and Ceremonies as may be for Gods glory, for edifying of the Church, and due reverence of the Sacraments.

He hath the Prerogative to *Consecrate* a Bishop (though it must be done in the presence and with the assistance of two other Bishops (as every Bishop gives Ordination but with the assistance of Presbyters) to assign *Co-adjutors* to infirm Bishops; to confirm the Election of Bishops within his Province; to call Provincial Synods according to the

Kings

Kings Writ alwayes directed to him; to be Moderator in the Synods or Convocations; to give his Suffrage there last of all; to visit the whole Province; to appoint a *Guardian* of the *Spiritualties*, during the Vacancy of any Bishoprick within his Province; whereby all the Episcopal Rights of that Diocess belong to him, all Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, as Visitation, Institutions, &c.

The Archbishop may retain and qualifie 8 Chaplains, which is 2 more than any Duke by Statute is allowed to do.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* hath moreover the Power to hold divers *Courts* of *Judicature* for deciding of Differences in Ecclesiastical Affairs, as his *Court of Arches*, his *Court of Audience*, his *Prerogative Court*, and his *Court of Peculiars*; of all which shall be handled particularly and apart in the Second Part of *The Present State of England*.

These

These and other Prerogatives and Priviledges the Wisdom of our first Reformers thought fit to be retained and added to the Chief Person (under the King) of the Church of *England*.

The next Person in the Church of *York*. *England* is the Archbishop of *York*; who was antiently also of very high repute in this Nation, and had under his Province not only divers Bishopricks in the North of *England*, but all the Bishopricks of *Scotland* for a long time; until the year 1470, when *Pope Sixtus* the 4th created the Bishop of *St. Andrews* Archbishop and Metropolitan of all *Scotland*.

He was also *Legatus Natvs* and had the Legantine Office and Authority annex to that Archbishoprick.

He hath still the place and precedence of all Dukes not of the Royal Blood, and of all great Officers of State, except only the Lord Chan-

356 The present State

Chancellour ; hath the Title of *Grace* and *Most Reverend Father* ; hath the Honour to *Crown the Queen* ; and to be her perpetual *Chaplain*.

He also is stiled *Primat* of *England* and *Metropolitan* of his Province, and hath under him the Bishopricks of *York*, *Durham*, *Carlisle*, *Chester*, and that of the *Iste of Man*. Only *Durham* hath a peculiar Jurisdiction, and in many things is wholly exempt from the Jurisdiction of the Archbishop.

He hath the Rights of a Count *Palatine* over a certain Territory near *York* erected by King *Rich. 2.* into a *County Palatine*, and had the like over *Hexamsire* in *Northumberland*. May qualifie also 8 *Chaplain*s, and hath within his Province divers other Prerogatives and Priviledges which the Archbishop of *Canterbury* hath within his own Province.

The

of England.

The next in place amongst the Clergy of *England* are the Bishops, so called from the Saxon word *Bisceop*, and that from the Greek *ἐπισκοπος* & *Speculator*, *Explorator* vel *Superintendens*, an Officer amongst the Heeathen so called, *quia praeerat pani & victui quotidiano: Episcopus enim apud Christianos praest panis & victui spirituali.*

All the Bishops of *England* are Barons and Peers of the Realm, They are Barons by a threefold manner (which cannot be said of the Lay Lords) they are *Feodal* in regard of their Lands and Baronies annex to their Bishopricks. They are *Barons by Writ*, being summoned by the Kings Writ to Parliament, and they are *created Barons by Patent*, which at their *Consecration* is always exhibited to the Archbishop. They have the Precedence of all Temporal Barons under *Vicounts*. In the Parliament have place in the *Upper House* in a *double* capa-

358 **The present State**

capacity, not only as Barons, but as Bishops; for before they were Barons, they had in all times place in the Great Council of the Kingdom: and there ever placed on the Kings *right hand*, not only to give their Advice as the Judges do, but *ad tractandum, ordinandum, statuendum, definiendum, &c.* They have the Title of *Lords* and *Right Reverend Fathers*.

All Bishops in *England* have one or two transcendent Priviledges, which seem almost *Regal*; as, In their own Court; to judge and pass Sentence alone by themselves, without any *Colleague* or *Assessor*; which is not done in other of the Kings Courts: for the Bishops Courts (though held by the Kings Authority *Virtute Magistratus sui*) are not accounted to be *properly* the Kings Courts, and therefore the Bishops send forth Writs in their own Names, *Teste* the Bishop, and not in the Kings Name; as all the Kings Courts properly so called do.

More-

of England.

359

Moreover Bishops have this other transcendent Priviledge, to depute their Authority to another (as the King doth) either to their *Bishops Suffragans*, to their *Chancellours*, to their *Commissaries* or other Officers; which none of the Kings Judges may do.

All Bishops have one Priviledge above and beyond all Lay Lords, *viz.* That in whatsoever Christian Princes Dominions they come, their Episcopal Dignity and Degree is acknowledged; and they may, *quatenus Bishops confer Orders, &c.* whereas no Lay Baron, *Vicount*, *Marquis*, nor *Duke*, is in Law acknowledged such out of the Dominions of the Prince who conferred those Honours.

The Laws and Customs of *England* are so tender of the Honour, Credit, Reputation and Person of Bishops our Spiritual Fathers, that none might (without special Licence from the King first obtained) be indicted of any Crime before any Temporal Judge.

Up-

Upon severe penalty by our Laws no man may raise reports, where by *Scandal* may arise to the Person of any Bishop, or Debate and Discord between them and the Commons of *England*.

In Civil Trials, where a Bishop is Plaintiff or Defendant, the Bishop may as well as any Lay Lord, challenge the *Array*, if one *Knight* at least be not returned of the Jury, and it shall be allowed unto him as a Priviledge due to his Peerage.

In Criminal Trials for life, all Bishops by *Magna Charta* and Stat. 25 *Edw. 3.* are to be tried by their Peers, who are Barons, and none under; notwithstanding the late conceit of some Lawyers, that because Bishops may not be on the Criminal Trial of a Peer, therefore are not to be tried by Peers; for so neither may Bishops be tried by a Common Jury, because they may not be on the Trial of such men. Moreover, Noble women may not be on the Trial of Peers, and yet they

they are to be tried by Peers of the Realm. And there is no *Legal* Precedent in *England* of a Bishop remaining a Bishop, that ever was tried for his life, but by Peers of the Realm. Antiently indeed Bishops were so exempted, as not at all to be tried by *Temporal* Judges, till after *deprivation* and *degradation*, and then being thereby rendred no Peers, but common Persons, they might be tried by Common Juries.

Since the Reformation, the English protestant Bishops have been so constantly Loyal and True to the Crown (to the envy of Non-Conformists) and so free from all Capital Crimes, that there is yet no Precedent in *England* for their manner of Trial for life. As for that Common Assertion, That no Lords of Parliament are to be tried by their Peers, but such as sit there *Ratione Nobilitatis*, and that all Lay Lords have place in Parliament for *that reason*; it is not only false but frivolous in the judgement of very many

R judi-

judicious men. And indeed how *absurd* and *unreasonable* must it needs be (let all men judge) that an Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who is by all acknowledged to be *Primus Par Regni*, should be tried by a Common Jury of Freeholders, when as the meanest Lay Baron, though created but yesterday, may not be tried by any under Barons?

In Parliament Bishops as Barons, may be present and vote at the Trial and Arraignment of a Peer of the Realm, only before Sentence of Death or loss of Member be pronounced, that they may have no hand in blood, no hand in *destroying*, but only in *saving*; they have by Canon Law the *Priviledge* and *Injunction* to absent themselves, and by Common Law to make Proxies to vote for them.

Primo Eliz. cap. 2. It is expressly declared that all Lords of Parliament (without any exception of Lords Spiritual) should be tried in that particular by their Peers.

The

The Bishops of *England* enjoy at this day many other Priviledges, as freedom from Arrests, Outlawries; Distress *per Equitaturam* or *in a Journey*; Liberty to hunt in any of the Kings Forrests or Parks, to kill one or two Deer going from or coming to the King upon his Order; to have certain Tuns of Wine free from Impost, &c.

The Persons of Bishops may not be seised upon Contempt (as the Persons of Lay Lords) but their Temporalities only may be seised.

Every Bishop may by Statute Law qualifie as many Chaplains as a Duke, *viz.* six.

The Law of *England* attributeth so very much to the Word of a Bishop, that not only in the Trial of *Bastardy* the Bishops Certificate shall suffice, but also in Trial of *Heresie*, which toucheth a mans *Life*; upon the Bishops bare Certificate that any hath been convicted before him of *Heresie*, the Secular

R 2

Power

364 The present State

Power puts him to death without any trial by his Peers.

The Persons of the Spiritual Governours of the Church of England, are of such high and tender respect in the eye of the Law, that it is thought fit to exact the same respect from a Clergyman to his Bishop or Ordinary, as from a Child to his Father; and therefore made the Offences of Parricide and Episcopicide equal, viz. both Petty Treason.

London.

Next to the two Archbishops of England, the Bishop of London amongst all the Bishops hath the pre-eminence. *Episcopus Londinensis* (saith an ancient Record) *speciali quadam Dignitate ceteris antepone- dus quia Ecclesie Cantuariensis Decanus est Provincialis*. Being Bishop over the Imperial and Capital City of England, it is by a Statute of later times expressly provided that he should have the preference and precedence of all the Bishops of Eng- land;

of England.

land; whereby he is become (as heretofore the Lord Prior of the Order of St John of Jerusalem) *Primus Baro Regni*, as the Lord Abergavenny is *Primus Baronum Laicorum*.

Next amongst those of the Episcopal Colledge is the Bishop of Durham within the Province of York, who hath been a Count Palatine 6 or 700 years; wherefore the Common Seal of the Bishoprick hath been of a long time an Armed Knight, holding in one hand a naked Sword, and in the other a Church.

He hath also at this day the Earldom of Sadberge annexed long ago to this Bishoprick by the King.

In the fifth place by vertue of the fore-mentioned Statute, is the Bishop of Winchester, reputed anti-ently Earl of Southampton, and so stiled in the Statutes of the Honourable Order of the Garter by Henry the Eighth, though soon af-

366 **The present State**

ter that Earldom was otherwise disposed of.

After these afore-named all the other Bishops take place according to the *Seniority* of their *Consecration*, unless any Bishop happen to be made Lord *Chancellour*, *Treasurer*, *Privy Seal*, or *Secretary of State*; which anciently was very usual, as reputed for their *Piety*, *Learning*, *Single life*, *Diligence*, &c. far more fit for the Advantage and Service of the King and Kingdome, than any Laymen; and in such case a Bishop being Lord *Chancellour*, had place next to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and above the Archbishop of *York*; and being *Secretary of State*, had place next to the Bishop of *Winchester*.

All the Bishops of *England* now living, take place as they are ranked in this Catalogue:

Dr Gilbert

of England.

367

Dr. *Gilbert Sheldon* L. Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, consecrated Bishop of *London* 1660, and translated to *Canterbury* 1663.

Dr. *Richard Stern* Lord Archbishop of *York*, consecrated Bishop of *Carlisle* 1660, and translated to *York* 1664.

Dr. *Humphrey Henchman* Lord Bishop of *London*, consecrated Bishop of *Salisbury* 1660, and translated to *London* 1663.

Dr. *John Cosins* consecrated Bishop of *Durham* 1660.

Dr. *George Morley* consecrated Bishop of *Worcester* 1660, and translated to *Winchester* 1662.

Dr. *William Piers* Bishop of *Bath and Wells*, consecrated 1632.

Dr. *Robert Skinner* consecrated Bishop of *Bristol* 1636, then translated to *Oxford* 1640, and lastly to *Worcester* 1663.

Dr. *William Lucy* Lord Bishop of *St. Davids*, consecrated 1660.

Dr. *Benjamin Laney* Lord Bishop of *Ely*, consecrated 1660 Bishop of

R 4. Peter

368 **The present State**

Peterborough, thence translated to *Lincoln* 1663, lastly to *Ely* 1667.

Dr. *Gilbert Ironside* Bishop of *Bristol*, consecrated 1660.

Dr. *Edward Reynolds*, consecrated 1660 Bishop of *Norwich*, he is also Abbot of *St. Bennet de Hulmo*, the sole Abbot now remaining in *England*.

Dr. *William Nicolson*, consecrated Bishop of *Gloucester* 1660.

Dr. *John Hacket*, consecrated Bishop of *Coventry* and *Lichfield* 1661.

Dr. *Herbert Crofts*, consecrated Bishop of *Hereford* 1661.

Dr. *Seth Ward*, consecrated Bishop of *Exeter* 1662. translated to *Salisbury* 1667.

Dr. *Henshaw*, consecrated Bishop of *Peterborough* 1663.

Dr. *Rainbow*, consecrated Bishop of *Carlisle* 1664.

Dr. *Blansford*, consecrated Bishop of *Oxford* 1665.

Dr. *Dolben* Bishop of *Rochester*, consecrated 1666.

Dr.

of England.

369

Dr. *Davis* Bishop of *Landaff*, consecrated 1667.

Dr. *Fuller*, consecrated Bishop of *Lincoln* 1667.

Dr. *Morgan*, consecrated Bishop of *Bangor* 1667.

Dr. *Sparrow*, consecrated Bishop of *Exeter* 1667.

Dr. *Wilkins*, consecrated Bishop of *Chester* 1668.

Dr. *Gunning* consecrated Bishop of *Chichester* 1669.

Dr. *Barrow* consecrated Bishop of *St. Asaph*, 1670.

These are all Barons and Peers of the Realm, these have place in the *Upper House of Parliament*, and in the *Upper House of Convocation*, and these are the *Lords Spiritual*; next follow the *Commons Spiritual*, consisting of *Suffragan Bishops, Deans, Archdeacons, Prebendaries, Rectors,* and *Vicars*; to whom also belong divers considerable Priviledges.

R. S. A. H.

All *Suffragan Bishops*, all *Deans*, *Arch-deacons*, *Prebendaries*, *Rectors*, and *Vicars*, have Priviledges, some by themselves, others by proxy or by representative, to sit and vote in the Lower House of Convocation.

No Subsidies or other Tax to the King may legally be laid upon them, without their own consent first had in Convocation.

The Clergy (as appears by the words of the *Writ*, as also by *Modus Tenendi Parliam.* and by 21 *Rich. 2. cap. 12.*) hath *per Procuratores Cleri*, Place and Suffrage in the *Lower House* of Parliament, as was antiently practised in *England*, and of later years in *Ireland*, (though now not used in either) and as the *Bishops* still have and use in the *Higher House* of Parliament.

No Clergyman may be compelled to undergo any *Personal Functions* or *Services* of the *Commonwealth*,

wealth, or to serve in *War*. If any man by reason of his Land, be subject to be elected to any *Servile Office*, if he takes Orders, he is free, and there is a *Writ* purposely to free him:

All Clergymen are free from the *Kings Purveyors*, the *Kings Carriages*, the *Kings Posts*, &c. for which they may demand a *Protection* from the King *cum clausula nolumus*.

If a Clergyman acknowledge a *Statute*, his *Body* shall not be taken by vertue of any *Process* thereupon; for the *Writ* runs, *Si Laicus sit*, &c.

Clergymen are not obliged to appear at *Sherives Tourns*, or *Views of Frank Pledge*, there to take their *Oath of Allegiance*, the Antient Laws presuming, that those, whose principal Care and Office should be to teach the People *Loyalty* and *Allegiance* to their King, could not themselves want *Loyalty*.

By

By *Magna Charta* no Clergyman is to be *fined* or *amerced* according to his *spiritual* means, but according to his *temporal* estate, and according to the *Crime* committed.

The *Goods* of Clergymen are discharged by the Common Law of England from *Tolls* and *Customes* (*si non exercent Marchandizas de eisdem*) of *Average*, *Pontage*, *Murage*, *Paviage*; for which they have the Kings *Writ* to discharge them.

The *Glebe* Lands and *Spiritual* Revenues of Clergymen being held in *pura & perpetua Eleemosyna* (i. e.) in *Frankalmoine*, are exempted from arraying and mustering of Men or Horses for the War, as appears in a Statute still in force, viz. 8 Hen. 4. Num. 12. in the unprinted Rolls of that Parliament.

The Clergy being by their *Function* prohibited to wear a *Sword* or any *Armes* (their *Coat* alone being their defence) cannot serve in *Person* in War. They serve their *Country* otherwise, and for that Service have

have alwayes been thought worthy of their *Spiritual Profits* and *Revenues*, and of the Kings *Protection*.

The Clergy paying to the King *First years profits* of all *Spiritual* Benefices, called *First Fruits*, and yearly the *Tenth* of all the said Benefices; are with great reason thought fit to be *exempted* from all other *Taxes*; though to give the *Laity good example*, they often lay *Subsidies*, or other *Great Taxes* upon themselves.

It was an Antient *Maxime* in England, *Nullus pro decimis debet onerari de aliqua reparatione Pontis seu aliquibus oneribus temporalibus.*

These and other Immunities of the Clergy the Great *Aquinas* thought agreeable to *Natural Equity*, or the *Law of Nature*, thence it was that King *Pharaoh* 47 Gen. when all the Lands of his Subjects were mortgaged to him for Bread, yet spared the Lands of the Priests. So *Exra* 7. 24. and so in our Antient Laws

374 **The present State**

Laws we find, *De Danigeldo libera & quicta erat omnis Ecclesia in Anglia & etiam omnis Terra que in proprio Dominio Ecclesie erat, ubicunque jacebat, nihil prorsus in tali redditione persolvens;* and the reason thereof is added, *Quia magis in Ecclesia confidebat Orationibus quam in Armorum defensionibus.*

Many more Priviledges, Immunities, Liberties, and Franchises there are rightly belonging to the Clergy of England, so many, that to set down all, saith Sir Edward Coke upon *Magna Charta*, would take up a whole Book.

The Priviledges of the Clergy and Franchises of the Church, were (with the Liberties of the People) granted, confirmed, and sealed by the King in full Parliament, Anno 1253, in such a solemn manner, as no Story can parallel it: The King stood up with his Hand upon his Breast, all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal stood with burning Tapers in their hands; the Archbishop pro-

of England.

pronounced as followeth, *By the Authority of God Omnipotent, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, &c. We excommunicate, anathematize, and sequester from Our Holy Mother the Church, all those who henceforth knowingly and maliciously deprive and spoil Churches of their right, and all those that shall by any art or wit rashly violate, diminish, or alter secretly or openly, in Deed, Word, or Counsel, those Ecclesiastical Liberties, &c. granted by Our Lord the King to the Archbishops, Bishops, Prelates, &c. For everlasting memory whereof we have hereunto put Our Seal. After which all throwing down their Tapers extinguishd and smoaking, they all said So let all that shall go against this Curse, be extinct and stink in Hell.*

Since which all Kings of England at their Coronations have by Solemn Oaths promised to preserve the same, and they have been confirmed by above 30 Successive Parliaments, commanded to be read
once

376 **The present State**

once a year in Churches; and if any Act should be made to the contrary, it is to be held for null and void, by the Statute of 4 *Edw.* 3.

Antiently men were very tender and fearful to do any thing that might make them incur the said dreadful censure: but of later times, especially since our Reformation, many men pretending to more Christianity, and to more knowledge, have made little conscience of infringing and violating any Rights, Priviledges, or Franchises of the Church or Churchmen; whilst the Liberties of the People (though very little violated) have been exacted, even to Sedition and Rebellion.

Revenues of the Clergy.

To the end that men of the best rank and abilities should in all times be encouraged to embrace the most painful and severe Profession of a Clergy-man, and that the People should the more willingly be guided and conducted by them, Our most Christian

of England.

Christian Ancestors, according to the Pattern of Gods antient People the Jews, and of all other Christian Common-wealths, judged it expedient to allot large Revenues and a most plentiful maintenance to the English Clergy; having observed with *Solomon* that a Wise man for his poverty is too oft contemned and despised, and that there is nothing more contemptible and ridiculous than a poor Clergy-man.

The first Kings of *England* had all the Lands of *England* in Demesne. The second sole Monarch amongst the Saxon Kings *Ethelwolphus*, by the advice of his Nobles, gave for ever to God and the Church both the Tythe of all Goods, and the Tenth part of all the Lands of *England*, free from all Secular Service, Taxations, or Impositions whatsoever; the Charter of Donation is to be seen in *Ingulphus* and other Authors; which Charter thus ends, *Qui augere voluerit nostram donationem* (as many Pious Kings and Nobles

bles since have done) *augeat Omnipotens Deus dies ejus prosperos, si quis vero mutare vel minuire presumpserit, noscat se ad tribunal Christi rationem redditurum.*

Besides the Tenth of Lands and the Husbandmans profits, Merchants also and Shop-keepers paid to their Spiritual Pastors the Tenth of their Gain, Servants in divers Places the Tenth of their Wages, (as Soldiers in the Kings Armies do now a part of their Pay) and in some places *Ale-sellers* the Tenth Flagon. Also Handicrafts-men and Day-Labourers paid the Tenth of their Wages upon their Oaths, if required.

Per Assisas Forestae and other Records, it doth appear, that Tithes have been paid even of Venison in divers parts of *England*, men making conscience in those days, as amongst the ancient Jews, to pay Tithes of all they possessed.

Besides all those, in some places were paid to the Pastor, Obventions, Obla-

Oblations, Pensions, Mortuaries, &c. so that the English Clergy were the best provided for of any Clergy in the whole World, except only the Nation of the Jews, amongst whom the Tribe of *Levi* being not the 40th part of the 12 Tribes, as appears in the Book of *Numbers*, yet had as Mr. *Selden* confesseth, and that by Gods own appointment, three times the Annual Revenue of the greatest of the 12 Tribes: inso-much that the poorest Priest in the 24 Courses might be reputed a wealthy person.

And as amongst the *Jews* the 24 Chief Priests, for the better maintenance of their Authority and Dignity, had means far exceeding those of the Inferiour Clergy, and the High Priest had a maintenance as far exceeding any of the said 24 Priests. So in *England* the Bishops by the great Piety and Bounty of several English Kings, had, in Lands and Revenues Temporal and Spiritual, a Maintenance far more ample

ple than those of the Inferiour Clergy, and the 2 Archbishops more ample than the Bishops.

William the Conquerour at his coming into *England*, found the Bishopricks then in being so richly endowed with Lands, that he erected them all into Baronies, and every Barony then consisted of 13 Knights Fees at the least.

Besides, there belonged to Bishops several Perquisites and Duties for the Visitations of their Diocesses, for Ordinations, Institutions, *Census Cathedralicus subsidium Charitativum*; which upon reasonable Causes they might require of the Clergy under them, also other Duties, called, *Decimarum quarta, Mortuorum & Oblationum pensitatio, Jus Hospitii, Processio, Litania, Viatici vel Commensus collatio*; which upon a Journey to *Rome* they might demand. Tenths and First Fruits were antiently paid (as is believed) to the several Diocesans, and was continued to the Bishop of *Norwich* till

till *Hen 8.* deprived him thereof, and deprived the Pope of all the rest. Moreover all Cathedral Churches were by divers Kings and Nobles richly furnished with Lands for the plentiful maintenance of a Dean and a certain number of Prebends; inso-much that together with the Lands given to Monasteries, a third part of the Lands of *England* belonged to the Church and Churchmen; whereby did accrue much benefit to this Nation, great Hospitality was kept, many Hospitals, Colledges, Churches, Bridges built, and other Publick, Pious, and Charitable Works. All Leases held of them by the Laity, were not only much more easie than other Tenures, but so unquestionable, that there was little work for the Lawyers; so much peaceableness, that 140 sworn Attourneys were thought sufficient to serve the whole Kingdom.

At present the Revenues of the English Clergy are generally very small

small and insufficient, above a third part of the best Benefices of *England* being antiently by the Popes Grant appropriated to Monasteries, towards their maintenance, were upon the dissolution of Monasteries made Lay-Fees; besides what hath been taken by secret and indirect means, thorow corrupt Compositions and Compacts and Customs in many other Parishes; also many large Estates wholly exempt from paying Tithes, as Lands belonging to the Cistertian Monks, to the Knights Templars and Hospitallers. Those Benefices that are free from these things, yet (besides First Fruits and Tenths to the King, and Procurations to the Bishop) are taxed towards the Charges of their respective Parishes, and towards the publick Charges of the Nation above and beyond the proportion of the Laity.

The Bishopricks of *England* have been also since the latter end of *H. 8.* to the coming in of King *James*, most

most miserably robbed and spoiled of the greatest part of their Lands and Revenues; so that at this day a mean Gentleman of 200 *l.* Land yearly, will not change his Worldy estate and condition with divers Bishops: An Attourney, a Shop-keeper, a common Artisan, will hardly change theirs with ordinary Pastors of the Church.

Some few Bishopricks do yet retain a competency, amongst which the Bishoprick of *Durham* is accounted one of the Chief, the yearly Revenues whereof, before the late troubles, were above 6000 *l.* of which by the late Act for abolishing Tenures in *Capite*, was lost above 2000 *l.* yearly. Out of it an yearly Pension of 880 *l.* hath been paid to the *Crown* ever since the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, who promised in lieu thereof so much in *Impropriations*; which was never performed. Above 340 *l.* yearly paid to several Officers of the County Palatine of *Durham*. The Assises and

384 The present State

and Sessions duly kept in the Bishops House, at the sole Charges of the Bishop. The several expences for keeping in repair certain Banks of Rivers in *Omdenshire* belonging to that Bishoprick, and of several Houses appertaining to that See. Moreover the yearly Tenths, the First Fruits, and Publick Taxes being deducted, there did remain *communibus annis* to the Bishop to keep Hospitality (which must be great) and to provide for those of his Family, but about 1500*l.* yearly. It is true, that for the future, whilst First Fruits and Subsidies cease to be paid, this Bishops Revenue will be raised to 500*l.* more *per annum*; and then the afore-mentioned 880*l.* being this present year by His Majesties Gracious Letters Patent under his Great Seal, begun to be released for all times to come, and about 400*l.* more *per annum* being added to that Revenue in divers Rents lately improved by the present Bishop Dr. *John Cosins* by the abate-

of England. 385

abatement of Fines (which otherwise he might have taken to himself) the whole yearly Revenues of this Bishoprick begins this year 1670 to be 3280*l.* *per annum*.
 Of other Principal Bishopricks the Revenues have been much diminished, some enjoying not a fourth part of their antient Rights.
 The great diminution of the Revenues of the Clergy, and the little care of augmenting or defending the Patrimony of the Church, is the great reproach and shame of the English Reformation, and will one day prove the ruin of Church and State.
 Judicious Mr. *Hooker* (who in the Preface of his Works foretold our late troubles 40 years before they came to pass) observing in his time how the Church was every day robbed of her Dues, and that it was then an Opinion rife, [*That to give to the Church smelt of Judaism and Popery, and to take from the Church what our Ancestors had given, was*
 S Refor-

386 The present State

Reformation] declared, that what *Moses* saith in the 90th Psalm, was likely to be verified of *Religion* and *Gods Service* amongst us. The time thereof may be *Threescore years and ten*, if it continue till *Fourscore*, it will be but small joy to those that shall then behold the Condition of the *English Church*; nor the best read Historian can produce one example of a happy *State*, where the *Clergy* hath been exposed to the peoples *Contempt*; which must needs happen where their *Benefices*, their *Maintenance* is *scandalous*, and thereby their *Persons* despicable.

It is the last Trick, saith *St. Gregory*, that the Devil hath in the World, when he cannot bring the *Word* and *Sacraments* in disgrace by *Errors* and *Heresies*, he invented this Project to bring the *Clergy* into contempt and low esteem, as it is now in *England*; where they are accounted by many as the *dross* and *refuse* of the *Nation*. Men think it a stain to their blood, to place their
Sons

of England.

387

Sons in that Function, and Women ashamed to marry with any of them; whereas antiently in *England* (as among the Jews, the Tribe of *Levi* was counted Noble above all other Tribes, except that of the Royal Tribe of *Judah*) the Function of the *Clergy* was of so high account and esteem, that not only the best *Gentry* and *Nobility*, but divers of the *Sons* and *Brothers* of divers of our *English Kings* since the *Conquest* and before, disdained not to enter into *Holy Orders*, and to be *Clergymen*, as at this day is practised in most other *Monarchies* of *Christendom*. *Ethelwolph* Son and Successor to *Egbert*, first sole King of *England*, was in *Holy Orders*, and *Bishop* of *Winchester* at his Fathers death. *Odo* *Bishop* of *Bayeux* in *Normandy*, was Brother to *William* the *Conquerour*. *Henry de Blois* Brother to King *Stephen*, was *Bishop* of *Winchester*. *Geofry Plantagenet* Son to *Henry 2.* was *Bishop* of *Lincoln*. *Henry de Beau-*
S 2 fort

388 **The present State**

fort Brother to Henry the 4th, was Bishop also of Winchester. And of later Times that most prudent Henry 7. had designed his second Son to be a Clergyman, to omit many others of Noble Blood. Which Policy is still observed even amongst the few Families of the Romish Religion in England, wherein are to be found at this day some Brothers or Sons of Dukes, Marquisses, Earls, and Barons in Holy Orders, and all the rest of the Stock of Barons, Knights, or Gentry: and for this cause find respect not only amongst those of their own Opinions; but even of the more sober, moderate, and best civilized Protestants. Whilst this Policy lasted in England, the Clergy were judged the fittest Persons to execute most of the Chief Offices and Places of the Kingdom (according to the Divine Policy amongst Gods peculiar People, where the Priests and Levites were the Principal Officers and Judges in every Court; to whom

whom the People were to be obedient on pain of death) and the Laity did with much reverence and respect submit to them. And as then, *Os Sacerdotis, Oraculum erat plebis* (according to that of Malachi 2. 7.) So *Os Episcopi Oraculum erat Regis & Regni, & Rex amplectebatur universum Clerum lata fronte & ex eo semper sibi eligebat primos & Consiliis, primos ad officia Regni obeunda. Primi igitur sedebant in omnibus Regni Comitibus & Tribunalibus Episcopi, in Regali quidem Palatio cum Regni Magnatibus, in Comitatu una cum Comite, in Turno cum Vicecomite, & in Hundredum Domino Hundredi, sic ut in promovenda Justitia usquequaque gladius gladium adjuvanet & nihil inconsulto Sacerdote vel Episcopo ageretur.* And because the Weal of the Kingdom and the Service of the King depended so much upon them, and their presence for that end so oft required at London, it was judged expedient that every Bi-

Bishoprick should have a Palace or House belonging to it in or about London; and it is known at this day where stood the Houses of every one, except that of St. *Asaph*, which also might probably have had one, but more obscure than some other; that Bishoprick having been, as still, very mean.

Great was the *Authority* of the Clergy in those dayes, and their *Memory* should be precious in these dayes, if we consider that they were the Authors of so great benefits and advantages to this Kingdom, that there are few things of any importance for promoting of the welfare of this Church and State, wherein the Bishops and Prelates, under God, have not been the *Principal Instruments*. The Excellent Laws made by King *Ina*, King *Athelstan*, King *Edmund*, and St. *Edward*, from whom we have our Common Laws, and our Privileges mentioned in *Magna Charta*, were all made by the persuasions and

and advice of *Bishops* and *Archbishops* named in our Histories. The *Union* of the Two Houses of *York* and *Lancaster* (whereby a long and bloody War was ended) was by the most wise Advice and Counsel of *Bishop Morton*, then a Privy Councillour. The *Union* of *England* and *Scotland*, that inexpressible advantage to both Nations, was brought to pass by the long foresight of Reverend Bishop *Fox* a Privy Councillour, in advising *Henry* the Seventh to match his Eldest Daughter to *Scotland*, and his Younger to *France*. Most of the Great Publick Works now remaining in *England*, acknowledge their antient and present being either to the sole Cost and Charges, or to the liberal Contributions, or at least to the powerful persuasions of Bishops; as most of the best endowed Colleges in both our Universities; very many Hospitals, Churches, Palaces, Castles, have been founded and built by Bishops; even that fa-

mous chargeable and difficult Structure of *London-Bridge* stands obliged to the liberal Contributions of an Archbishop; and it was a Bishop of *London*, at whose earnest request *William the Conquerour* granted to the City of *London* so large Priviledges, that in a grateful remembrance thereof, the *Lord Mayor* and *Aldermen* to this day, upon some solemn days of their resort to *St. Pauls Church*, do go in *Procession* about the *Grave stone* where that Bishop lies interred.

But above all, The *Converting England* to the *Christian Religion*, the *Reforming that Religion* when corrupted, and since that, the maintenance of the *Doctrine* thereof against all *Romish Writers*, and of the *Discipline* thereof (none of the least good Offices) against all the *Practices* and *Power* of the *Puritan* and *Presbyterian Factions*, and all those other *Sectaries* lineally descended from them, all this and more is owing (if not solely, yet

yet principally) to *Bishops* and *Pre-lats*: by the late want of whom to sit at the *Stern*, how soon was this goodly *Vessel* split upon the *Rocks* of *Anarchy* and *Confusion*.

Even since the late *Restauration* of *Bishops*, to set down the many considerable *publick Benefits* flowing from them and other *Dignified Clergy*, would tire the *Reader*.

What sums of *Money* have been by them expended in repairing *Cathedral Churches*, *Episcopal Houses*, in founding and building *Hospitals*, in *Charity* to poor *Widows* of *Clergymen* utterly ruined by the late *Rebels*, for redeeming of a great number of poor *Christian Slaves* at *Algier*, what *publick* and *private Sums* for supplying the *Kings Necessities* at his *Restauration*, what *Expences* in *Hospitality*, &c. above and beyond the *Charity* and *Bounty* of others who have ten times their *Wealth* and *Riches*?

394 The present State

To instance in a few, whereof certain information hath been given.

Dr. William Juxon Archbishop of Canterbury, deceased, augmented to poor Vicaridges to the value of 11000 l. paid for Redemption of Christian Captives, in Subsidies, Poll-money, Benevolences, First-Fruits, &c. 10000 l. Repairs 16000 l. Besides for repairing of St. Paul's Church 2000 l. to St. John's Colledge in Oxford 7000 l. In other Charitable Uses 2000 l. in all 48000 l. Besides all this, he was so kind to his Tenants, as to abate in their Fines 16000 l.

Dr. Gilbert Sheldon, late Bishop of London, now Archbishop of Canterbury, gave for Redemption of Captives, and other Charitable Uses, in Subsidies, Benevolences, Purchase of London-House, Repairs, Building at Oxford, First-Fruits, &c. 40000 l. and abated to his Tenants 17000 l. and all this whilst he was Bishop of London.

Dr. Brian

of England. 395

Dr. Brian Duppa, late Bishop of Winchester, gave for Redeeming Captives, Building and endowing Alms-Houses, with other Charitable Deeds, in Benevolences, Repairs, &c. 16000 l. and was so good to his Tenants, as to abate 30000 l. in their Fines.

Dr. Frewen late Archbishop of York, disbursed in publick payments and repairs only, besides abatements to Tenants, 15000 l.

Dr. Cosins the fore-mentioned Bishop of Durham, having from his first entrance to the end of 7 years, not received above 19800 l. he expended it all and 5000 l. more either in rebuilding and repairing the Houses and Castles belonging to that See, or in rebuilding the Chappel at Auckland, and Free Schools at Durham, all which had been ruined by the late Rebels; in founding 2 Hospitals and a Publick Library, in founding 8 Scholarships in Cambridge: of which pious and and charitable works, the whole expences

expences came (according to most certain information) to above 22000 *l.* Besides he hath expended in 2 Benevolences to the King, in redeeming of Christian Captives at *Algiers*, for his Consecration, &c. for the Furniture of the New Chappel at *Ankland* with Plate and other decent Ornaments, for relieving the distressed Loyal Party and other publick and pious uses, above 4400 *l.* All which is here declared more particularly then the designed brevity of this Treatise would handsomely allow, only thereby to put a stop to the clamour of many persons against this Bishop and many others, as if they had received vast sums of money and put it all in their private Purses.

Dr. *Warner* late Bishop of *Rochester*, though his Fines were but small, yet besides abatements to Tenants, he gave in Royal Presents, Benevolences, Subsidies, Redeeming of Captives, &c. above 25000 *l.* The Deans and Chapters were pro-

proportionably as liberal, to mention in some of them.

That of *Canterbury* in Royal Presents, Charities, Repairs, besides all abatements to Tenants, gave 16000 *l.*

That of *Winchester* in all 45800 *l.*

Durham 15000 *l.*

Ely 14000 *l.*

Exeter near 26000 *l.*

Lincoln 11000 *l.*

Rochester 10000 *l.*

Worcester 9000 *l.*

Windsor in abatements of Fines 9000 *l.* in Royal Presents 2600 *l.* in Augmentations 6900 *l.* in Repairs 8000 *l.* in Charitable Works above 2000 *l.* in all 28500 *l.*

York 8000 *l.*

Wells 8000 *l.*

The Sum Total of only these above mentioned Bishops, Deans, and Chapters, amounts to 413800 pounds.

The rest doubtless parted with their money proportionably, and then all accompts cast up, the remainder

398 The present State

mainder could not be great. For instance in one of the best Churches, *Canterbury*, out of their clear remainder at the end of the year 1664. they had no more than every Prebend 1100 l. and the Dean a double share.

As they have then been beneficial to this Kingdom above and beyond other ranks of men, so they have had the highest respect, reverence, and esteem.

In all Ages amongst all Nations, amongst *Turks*, as well as *Jews* and *Christians*, it was judged fit that the Principal *Domestique Servants* of the King of Heaven and Earth either should be of the *Chiefest* and *Noblest* upon Earth, or at least should be so esteemed.

Such *Reverence* our Ancestors bare to that Function, that (as *Selden* observes) to fall down and *kiss the feet*, was a Ceremony usual towards other Bishops and Principal Prelates besides the Bishop of *Rome*. Divers of our Saxon and
Nor-

of England.

Norman Kings and Nobles so respected them, that they constrained them in *Publick Grants* yet to be seen, to *sign* before the highest of the *Lay Nobles*, and sometimes before the Kings own Sons and Brothers, &c. to take precedence of them, &c.

In the year 1200, three Kings, *viz.* of *England*, *Scotland*, and of *South-Wales*, to express their pious and courteous respect to *Hugh* Bishop of *Lincoln*, disdained not with their own *Royal Shoulders* to bear his dead Corps to the Grave.

And yet it hath been observed even by *Strangers*, that the *Iniquity* of the *present times in England* is such, that the *English Orthodox Clergy* are not only hated by the *Romanists* on the one side, and maligned by the *Presbyterian* on the other side (as the *English Liturgy* hath also been for a long time by both of them (a sure evidence of the excellency thereof) and as our
Saviour

400 **The present State**

Saviour was crucified between two Thieves) but also that of all the Christian Clergy of *Europe* (whether *Romish*, *Lutheran*, or *Calvinian*) none are so little respected generally, nor beloved, obeyed, or rewarded, as the present Pious, Learned, Loyal, Orthodox Clergy of *England*, even by some of those who have always professed themselves of that Communion.

O Deus in qua tempora reservasti nos!

Here followeth a Catalogue of the present Deans in the Provinces both of *Canterbury* and *York*.

In the Province of *Canterbury*.

Dr. *Turner* Dean of *Canterbury*.
 Dr. *Sancroft* Dean of *Pauls*.
 Dr. *Dolben* Bishop of *Rochester* and
 Dean of *Westminster*. Dr.

of England.

401

Dr. *Clark* Dean of *Winchester*.
 Dr. *Wilford* Dean of *Ely*.
 Dr. *Creyton* Dean of *Bath* and *Wells*.
 Dr. *Williams* Bishop of *Ossory* and
 Dean Commendatory of *Banger*.
 Dr. *Fell* Dean of *Christ-Church*.
 Dr. *Hardy* Dean of *Rochester*.
 Dr. *Thomas* Dean of *Worcester*.
 Dr. *Bredyok* Dean of *Salisbury*.
 Dr. *Honywood* Dean of *Lincoln*.
 Dr. *Lloyd* Dean of *St. Asaph*.
 Dr. *Cary* Dean of *Exeter*.
 Dr. *Duport* Dean of *Peterborough*.
 Dr. *Crofts* Dean of *Normich*.
 Dr. *Toogood* Dean of *Bristol*.
 Dr. *Hodges* Dean of *Hereford*.
 Dr. *Brough* Dean of *Glocester*.
 Dr. *Wood* Dean of *Litchfield*.
 Dr. *Crew* Dean of *Chichester*.

In the Province of *York*.

Dr. *Hitch* Dean of *York*.
 Dr. *Sudbury* Dean of *Durham*.
 Dr. *Carlton* Dean of *Carlisle*.
 Dr. *Bridgeman* Dean of *Chester*.

Note.

Note, That in the Cathedral Churches of *St. Davids* and of *Landaff* there never hath been any Dean, but the Bishop in either is Head of the Chapter, and in the Bishops absence the Chanter at *St. Davids*, and at *Landaff* the Archdeacon.

Note also, That there are some Deans in *England* without any Jurisdiction, only for Honour so stiled; as the Dean of the Chappel *Royal*, and Dean of the Chappel of *St. George* at *Windsor*.

Moreover, some Deans there are without any Chapter, yet enjoying certain jurisdictions, as the Dean of *Croyden*, the Dean of *Battel*, the Dean of *Bocking*, &c.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

Of the Second State, or Nobility of England, and therein of their Degrees, Priviledges, State, Revenues, &c.

N*obiles quasi viri noscibiles*, or *Notables*. In all Christian Monarchies, men that have been *Notable* for *Courage, Wisdom, Wealth, &c.* have been judged fit and worthy to enjoy certain *Priviledges, Titles, Dignities, Honours, &c.* above the Common People, to be placed in an higher Orbe, and to be as a *Use* *Skreen* between the King and the inferiour Subjects, to defend the one from *Insolencies*, and the other from *Tyranny*; to interpose by their *Counsel, Courage, and Grandeur*, where common persons dare not, ought not to be so hardy, to support the King and defend the Kingdom

404 The present State

dom with their lives and fortunes.

The Nobility of England is called the Peerage of England, because they are all *Pares Regni*; that is *Nobilitate Pares*, though *gradu impares*.

Degrees. The Degrees of the English Nobility are only five, viz. Duke, Marquis, Earl, Vicount, and Baron. These are all Peers, but the four first are for State, Priviledge, and Precedence, above and before those who are Barons only.

Duke. A Duke in Latine *Dux, a ducendo*; Noblemen being antiently either *Generals* and *Leaders* of Armies in time of War, or *Wardens* of *Marches* and *Governours* of *Provinces* in time of Peace; afterwards made so for term of Life, then held by *Lands* and *Fees*, at length made *Hereditary* and *Titular*.

The first Duke since the Conquerour was *Edward the Black Prince*, created so by *Edw. 3.* in the 11th year of his Reign. A Duke is at this day

of England.

day created by *Patent*, *Cincture of Sword*, *Mantle of State*, *Imposition of a Cap* and *Coronet of Gold* on his Head, and a *Verge of Gold* put into his hand.

Marchio a *Marquis*, was first so called from the Government of *Marches* and *Frontier Countries*. The first that was so created was *Robert Vere* Earl of *Oxford*, made *Marquis of Dublin* in *Octavo* of *Richard 2.*

A *Marquis* is created by a *Cincture of a Sword*, *Mantle of State*, *Imposition of a Cap of Honour*, with a *Coronet* and delivery of a *Charter* or *Patent*.

Earls antiently called *Comites*, because they were wont *Comitari Regem*, to wait upon the King for Counsel and Advice. The *Saxons* called them *Ealdormen*, the *Danes* *Eorlas* and the *English* *Earls*. They had antiently for the support of their state the third penny out of the *Sheriffs Court* issuing out of all *Pleas* of that *Shire* whereof they had their Title,

406 The present State

Title, but now it is otherwise.

An Earl is created by the *Cincture* of a *Sword*, a *Mantle of State* put upon him by the King himself, a *Cap* and a *Coronet* put upon his head, and a *Charter* in his hand.

All Earls are stiled by the King *Consanguinei nostri*, *Our Cousins*, and they antiently did and still may use the style of *Nos*.

All the Earls of *England* are local, or denominated from some *Shire*, *Town*, or *Place*, except Two, whereof one is personal, as the *Earl Marshal* of *England*, who is not onely honorary as all the rest, but also officary. The other is nominal, viz. *Earl Rivers*, who takes his denomination from an illustrious Family, as the rest do from some noted *Place*.

Vicount. Vicecomes quasi Vice Comitibus gubernaturus Comitatum. This Title was first given say some by *Hen. 6.* in the 18th year of his Reign to *John Beaumont*, though it may be found that *5 H. 5.* *Sir Robert Brent* was by

of England.

407

by that King created a *Vicount*.

Vicounts also are stiled by the King *Consanguinei nostri*, *Our Cousins*.

A *Vicount* is so made by *Patent*.

In the *Laws* of the *Longobards* *Barones* and of the *Normans* this word *Baron* was used for *Vir*, as at this day *Baron* or *Varon* in the *Spanish* Tongue is used for the same; so that a *Baron* is *Vir nati' e' g' d' v*, *Vir Nobilis & Principalis*; so the *Chief Burgeses* of *London* antiently, and still those of the *Cinque Ports* are called *Barons*.

Antiently those *Barons* only were accounted *Peers* of the *Realm*, that held of the King *per integram Baroniam*, which consisted of 13 *Knights Fees*, and one third part (each *Knights Fee* being 20 *l.*) which make in all 400 *Marks*, and whoever had so much, was wont to be summoned to *Parliament*. Now to hold *per Baroniam*, is to hold *per hereditatem Baronis*, whether greater or less. Barons

408 The present State

Barons in the beginning of the Reign of *H. 3.* were not of so much repute as afterwards, when that King (after that great Rebellion against him was suppressed) called by Writ unto Parliament onely such great men as had continued Loyal; which the succeeding Kings observing, they only were accounted Peers of the Realm, that were called by the Kings special Writ, and the others lost their Peerage.

The Earls Palatines and Earls Marches of *England*, had anciently also their Barons under them; as in *Cheshire* there are yet such Barons: but as no Bishops but those that hold immediately of the King, are Peers of the Realm (for the Bishop of *Man*, holding immediately of the Earl of *Derby* is no Peer) so no Barons, but those that hold immediately of the King, are Peers of the Realm.

Caput Baronie is some Castle or Chief Seat of a Nobleman, which is not to be divided amongst Daughters

of England.

409

ters (if there be no Son) but must descend to the Eldest Daughter, *ceteris filiabus aliunde satisfactis.*

Land holden by Barony, doth not make the purchaser that is ignoble to be noble, although the charge of such Tenure doth lie upon him in respect of the Service of the Realm; no more than Land by Villain-Service, doth make the Purchaser that is a Freeman a Villain, though he shall thereby be bound to his Villain-Service due for those Lands.

Barons are sometimes made by *Writ*, being thereby called to sit in the Higher House of *Parliament*, but most usually by *Patent*.

All the fore-mentioned Degrees have the Title of *Lord* from the *Saxon* word *Laforð*, *Dominus*.

All the Lords of *England* both *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, are *Fendatories* to the King, and in their Creation, and also in their Succession, do swear an *Oath of Fealty*, and do *Homage* to the King their Sovereign,

T and

and pay certain Duties, as Signs and Symbols of their Subjection to their *Prince*.

All Honours in *England* are given by the King, who is the sole Fountain of Honour.

The Law of *England* prohibiteth all Subjects of the Realm to receive any Hereditary Title of Honour, or Dignity, of the Gift of any *Foreign Prince, King, or Emperour*. *Est enim jus Majestatis & inter Insignia summa potestatis.*

None of these *Honours* bestowed by the King on a *Family*, can be lost, but by want of Issue Male, except where the Patent extends to Issue Female, as sometimes it doth; or else by some heinous Crime; and then that Family cannot be restored to their *Blood* but by *Parliament*.

All Noblemen at their Creation have two Ensigns, to signifie two Duties. Their Heads are adorned *ad consulendum Regem & Patriam tempore pacis*, and they are girt with a *Sword ad defendendum Regem & Patriam tempore belli*. The

The several Degrees of the English Nobility are differenced and distinguisht one from another by their Titles and Engins of Honour.

A *Duke* hath the Title of *Grace*, and being written unto, may be stiled, *Most High, Potent, and Noble Prince*. A *Marquis*, *Most Noble and Potent Lord*. An *Earl*, *Most Noble and Potent Lord*. A *Vicount*, *Right Noble and Potent Lord*. And, A *Baron*, *Right Noble Lord*.

Their Coronets are all different. A *Baron* hath 6 Pearls upon the Circle, given to that Honour by the present King. A *Vicount* hath his Circle of Pearls without number. An *Earls* Coronet hath the Pearls raised upon Points and Leaves low between. The *Marquis* a Pearl and a Strawberry Leaf round of equal height. And a *Dukes* Coronet only Leaves without Pearls. They are more especially distinguisht by their *Robes of Parliament*, by their several *Guards* on their *Mantles* or

412 **The present State**

Short Cloaks about their Shoulders. A Baron hath but two *Guards*, a Vicount two and a half; an Earl three, a Marquis three and a half, and a Duke four: Also the Mantle of a Duke, Marquis, and Vicount, is faced with Ermine, that of a Vicount and Baron faced with Plain White Furre.

The Nobility of *England* have in all times enjoyed many considerable Priviledges.

All Peers of the Realm being lookt on as the Kings Hereditary constant Counsellours, their Persons out of Parliament time are priviledged (as others in Parliament time) from all arrest, unless for Treason, Felony, or breach of Peace, Condemnation in Parliament, or Contempt to the King. No *Supplicavit* can be granted against them; No *Capias* or *Exigent* sued out against them for Actions of *Debt* or *Trespas*. No *Essoin* lies against any Peer of the Realm. In
Criminal

of **England.**

413

Criminal Causes, Treason, or Felony, they cannot be tried by any other Jury but by a Jury of Peers of the Realm; who are not as other Juries to be put to their Oath, but their Verdict given in upon their Honour sufficeth. In Civil Causes they are not to be empanelled upon any Jury, nor upon any Enquests *de facto*, though in a matter between two Peers. In case any Peer be returned upon any such Jury, there is a special Writ for his discharge. Vpon no case to be bound to their good behaviour, nor put to swear they will not break the Peace, but only to promise it upon their Honour; which was ever counted so sacred, as upon no terms to be violated. A Peer of the Realm may not be put to the Rack or Torture to discover the truth, though accused of High Treason. Every Peer of the Realm called to Parliament, hath the Priviledge in his lawful absence to constitute a Proxy to vote for him, which none

T 3 of

of the Commons may do. Also in places of trust committed to them, they are allowed to make Deputies, by reason of the necessity supposed in the Law of their attendance on the Person of the King, though neither Civil Law nor Common Law allow any others Testimony to be valid, but what is given upon Oath, yet the Testimony of a Peer of *England*, given in upon his Honour, without any Oath, is esteemed valid; and they were wont to be examined upon their Allegiance and the Loyalty of their Chivalry, and to put in their answer to a Bill *super honorem*, without taking an Oath; though of later times that Priviledge, by the neglect of some Lords hath been infringed sometimes. A day of Grace by the favour of the Court is not to be granted to the Plaintiff in any Suit or Action wherein a Peer of the Realm is Defendant; and this by Statute Law, because the Law presumes that a Peer of the Realm must

must alwayes be ready to attend the Person of the King and the Service of the Common-wealth, and therefore it is not to be delayed longer than the ordinary use of the Court, but to have expedition of Justice. At the beginning of Parliament when the Oath of Supremacy is exacted of all those of the House of Commons, yet it is not required of any of the Lords, because the King is otherwise assured of their Loyalty and Fidelity, as is presumed. In all Cases wherein the priviledge of Clergy is allowed to other men, and also in divers Cases where that Priviledge is taken away from other men, every Peer of the Realm having Place and Voice in Parliament, shall upon his Request by *Stat. 1 Ed. 6.* without burning in the hand, loss of Inheritance, or corruption of Blood, be adjudged for the first time as a Clerk convicted, though he cannot read. The Title of Lord is due to all that are Barons of *England*, and to none

416 The present State

other besides Bishops, and some great Officers of the Kingdom.

Only of Courtesie the Title of Lord is given to all the Sons of Dukes and Marquisses, and to the Eldest Sons of Earls, and to none under.

All Barons of England are exempted from all attendance at Sheriffe Tourns or any Leets, as others are, to take the Oath of Allegiance.

A Peer cannot be outlawed in any Civil Action, because he cannot be arrested by any Capias, and by the same reason lies no Attachment against him.

By the Custom of England, (as is by the Law of the Empire) *Nobiles non torquentur in quibus plebei torquerentur & Nobiles non suspenduntur sed decapitantur*: yet this by the meer favour of the King, and in some cases, especially of Felony, hath been otherwise sometimes.

For the suppressing of Riots and Routs, the Sheriff may raise the *Posse Comitatus*

of England.

Comitatus, that is, all able men are to assist him; yet may not the Sheriff command the person of any Peer of the Realm to attend that Service.

A Baron of Parliament being sent for by the Kings Writ or Letter, or by his Messenger to come to Court, or to Parliament, or to appear before the Council-Board, or in his Court of Chancery, may both coming and returning by the Kings Forest or Park, kill one or two Deer.

In any Civil Trial, where a Peer of the Realm is Plaintiff or Defendant, there must be returned of the Jury at least one Knight, otherwise the Array may be quashed by Challenge.

The Laws of England are so tender of the Honour, Credit, Reputation and Persons of Noblemen, that there is a Statute on purpose to prohibit all offence by false reports, whereby any scandal to their persons may arise, or debate and dis-

T S cord

418 The present State

cord between them and the Commons; and because it is to defend not only Lay Lords but Bishops and all great Officers of the Realm, it is called *Scandalum Magnatum*.

The House of a Peer cannot in some Cases (as in search for Prohibited Books, for Conventicles, &c.) be entred by Officers of Justice without a Warrant under the Kings own hand, and the hands of six of his Privy Council, whereof four to be Peers of the Realm.

No Peer can be assessed towards the standing *Militia*, but by six or more of themselves.

The Law allowing any one of the Commonalty to be arraigned for Felony or Treason *in favorem vite* to challenge 35 of his Jury without shewing cause, and others by shewing cause; yet allows not a Peer of the Realm to challenge any of his Jury, or to put any of them to their Oath, the Law presuming that they being all Peers of the Realm, and judging upon their Honour,

of England.

Honour, cannot be guilty of Falshood, or Favour, or Malice.

All Peers of the Realm have a Priviledge of qualifying a certain number of Chaplains, who (after a Dispensation from the Arch-Bishop (if to him it seem good) and the same ratified under the Great Seal of *England*) may hold Plurality of Benefices with Cure of Souls: In this manner every Duke may qualify six Chaplains, every Marquis and Earl five apiece, every Vicount four, and every Baron three.

A Peer of the Realm may retain 6 Aliens born, whereas another may not retain above 4.

In Case of Amercements of the Peer of the Realm upon Non-suits or other Judgements, a Duke is to be amerced only 10 pounds, and all under, only 5 *l.* and this to be done by their Peers, according to *Magna Charta*; although it is oft done now by the Kings Justices in stead of their Peers.

All

All Peers of the Realm being constant hereditary Councellours of the King in his Great Council of Parliament, and being obliged upon the Kings Summons to appear and attend in all Parliaments upon their own Charges, are priviledged from contributing to the Expences of any Member of the House of Commons; for which no levy may be made upon any of their Lands, Parcel of their Earldoms or Baronies, any of their ancient Demesns, Copyhold, or Villain Tenants.

The Estates of all Peers of the Realm being judged in the Eye of the Law sufficient at all times to satisfie all Debts and Damages, satisfaction is to be sought by Execution taken forth upon their Lands and Goods, and not by Attachments, Imprisonments of their Persons, (those are to be alwayes free for the Service of the King and Kingdom) nor by Exigents or *Capias Utlagatum*, &c.

Other

Other Priviledges belong to the Peers of *England*, as 8 Tun of Wine Custom free to every Earl, and to the rest proportionably, &c.

Notwithstanding these great Priviledges belonging to the Nobility of *England*, yet the greatest of them (no not the Brother or Son of the King) ever had the Priviledge of the *Grandees of Spain*, to be covered in the Kings Presence, except only *Henry Ratcliffe* Earl of *Surrey*, as before *Pag. 160.* nor had ever that higher Priviledge of the Nobility of *France*, whose Domain Lands and their Dependants holding them are exempted from all Contributions and Tallies, whereby they are tied to their King, and so enabled to serve him, that although Rebellions are frequent, yet seldom of long continuance, and never prosperous; whereas the highest born Subject of *England* hath herein no more Priviledge than the meanest Plowman, but utterly want that kind of reward for

for ancient Vertue, and encouragement for future Industry.

Precedence.

Touching the Places or Precedences amongst the Peers of *England*, it is to be observed, that (after the King and Princes of the Blood, *viz.* the Sons, Grandsons, Brothers, Uncles, or Nephews of the King, and no farther) Dukes amongst the Nobility have the first place, then Marquisses, Dukes eldest Sons, Earls, Marquisses eldest Sons, Dukes younger Sons, Vicounts, Earls eldest Sons, Marquisses younger Sons, Barons, Vicounts eldest Sons, Earls younger Sons, Barons eldest Sons, Vicounts younger Sons, Barons younger Sons.

Here note, That it was decreed by King *James*, that the younger Sons of Barons and Vicounts should yield Place and Precedence to all Knights of the Garter, *quatenus tales*, and to all Privy-Councillours, Master of the Wards, Chancellour, and

and Under-Treasurer of the *Exchequer*, Chancellour of the Dutchy, Chief Justice of the Kings Bench, Master of the Rolls, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, Chief Baron of the *Exchequer*, and all other Judges and Barons of the degree of the Coife of the said Courts, and that by reason of their Honourable Order and Employment; and also to all Bannerets made under the Kings Banner or Standard displayed in an Army Royal in open War, and the King personally present.

Moreover, Observe that all Nobles of the same degree take place according to the Seniority of their Creation.

There are certain Marks of State *State.* that belong to each degree amongst the Nobility, which they may practise or not practise at pleasure.

A Duke may have in all places *Duke.* out of the Kings presence a Cloth of Estate hanging down within half a yard

424 **The present State**

yard of the ground, so may his Dutches, and her Train born up by a Barones; and no Earl to wash with a Duke without the Dukes pleasure.

Marquiss A Marquiss may have a Cloth of Estate reaching within a yard of the ground, and that in all places out of the presence of the King or a Duke and his Marchioness to have her Train born by a Knights Wife; and no Vicount to wash with a Marquiss but at his pleasure.

Earl. An Earl also may have a Cloth of Estate without Pendants, but only Fringe, and a Countess may have her Train born by a Gentlewoman out of the presence of her Superiors, and in her presence by a Gentleman.

Vicount. A Vicount may have a Cover of Assay holden under his Cup while he drinks, but no Assay taken, as Dukes, Marquisses and Earls may have

of England. 425

have, and may have a Travers in his own house. And a Vicountess may have her Gown born up by a Woman out of the presence of her Superiours, and in their presence by a Man.

A Baron may also have the Cover *Baron.* of his Cup holden underneath whilst he drinketh, and a Barones may have her Gown born up by a man in the presence of a Vicountess.

All Dukes eldest Sons are born as Marquisses, and the younger as Lords, with the addition of their Christian Names, as Lord *Thomas*, Lord *John*, &c.

A Marquisses eldest Son is called Lord of a place, and the younger Sons Lord *Thomas*, Lord *John*, &c.

An Earls eldest Son is called Lord of a place, and all his Daughters Ladies, but his younger Sons not Lords.

A Vicounts eldest Son is no Lord, nor his Daughters Ladies, and therefore the eldest Son and the eldest Daughter

Daughter of the first Vicount of *England*, is said to be the first Gentleman and Gentlewoman without Title in *England*.

The Princes of the Blood, the Great Officers of the Realm, and the Bishops are to precede, according to an Act of Parliament, 31 *H. 8.*

The Lord Chancellour, Lord Treasurer, Lord President of the Kings Council, Lord Privy Seal: These being Barons or above, shall in Parliament sit above all Dukes, except the Son, Brother, or Nephew of the King.

The Lord High Steward of *England* is not here named, because it was intended that he should not continue beyond the occasion for which he should be made.

Next hath place the L. Great Chamberlain of *England*, then the Lord High Constable, the Earl Marshal, the Lord High Admiral, Lord Steward of the Kings Household, Lord Chamberlain of the Kings Household. These shall sit after the

the Lord Privy Seal, above all of their degree onely. And if the Kings Principal Secretary be a Baron, he takes place of all Barons that are not of the Offices before-mention'd; but if he be a Vicount or higher Degree, he shall take place only according to his Degree. Also if the Kings Secretary be a Bishop, as anciently was usual, he takes place next to the Bishop of *Winchester*, before all other Bishops that have none of the Offices aforesaid.

All Dukes, Marquisses, Earls, Vicounts, and Barons, not having any of the said Offices, shall take place according to the ancientry of their Creation.

All Dukes eldest Sons have the Title of Earls, and the eldest Son of an Earl, hath the Title of the Earls Barony, and sometimes of the Vicounty, according to the Patent.

A Catalogue of the Peers of England according to their Precedence.

Dukes of the Royal Blood.

JAMES Duke of York and Albany, Earl of Ulster, Lord High Admiral of England, the Kings only Brother.

Edgar Duke of Cambridge.

Rupert Duke of Cumberland and Earl of Holderness.

The Lord Chancellour or Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, the Lord Treasurer, and the Lord Privy Seal, take place before all Dukes not of the Blood Royal.

Dukes.

Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolk.

William Seymour Duke of Somerset.

George Villars Duke of Buckingham.

Charles Stuart Duke of Richmond.

Christo-

Christopher Monk Duke of *Albemarle*.

James Scot Duke of *Monmouth*.

William Cavendish Duke of *Newcastle*.

Marquisses.

John Pawlet Marquis of *Winchester*.

Henry Somerset Marquis of *Worcester*.

Henry Pierrepont Marquis of *Dorchester*.

Earls.

These three take place in respect of their Offices.

Robert Bertue Earl of *Lindsey*, Lord High Chamberlain of *England*.

James Butler Earl of *Brecknock*, Lord Steward of the Kings Household.

Edward Montague Earl of *Manchester*, Lord Chamberlain of the Kings Household.

Earls.

Earls.

Ambrey de Vere Earl of Oxford.
Joceline Piercy E. of Northumberland.
Charles Talbot Earl of Shrewsbury.
Anthony Grey Earl of Kent.
Charles Stanley Earl of Derby.
John Mannours Earl of Rutland.
Theophilus Hastings Earl of Huntingdon.
William Russel Earl of Bedford.
William Herbert Earl of Pembroke.
Edward Clinton Earl of Lincoln.
Charles Howard Earl of Nottingham.
James Howard Earl of Suffolk.
Richard Sacvile Earl of Dorset.
Robert Cecil Earl of Salisbury.
John Cecil Earl of Exeter.
John Edgerton Earl of Bridgwater.
Robert Sydney Earl of Leicester.
James Compton Earl of Northampton.
Charles Rich Earl of Warwick.
William Cavendish Earl of Devonshire.
Basil Fielding Earl of Denbigh.

George

George Digby Earl of Bristol.
Lionel Cranfield Earl of Middlesex.
Robert Rich Earl of Holland.
Gilbert Holles Earl of Clare.
Oliver St. John Earl of Bullingbroke.
Charles Fane Earl of Westmorland.
Edward Montague Earl of Manchester.
Charles Howard Earle of Berkshire.
John Sheffield Earl of Mulgrave.
William Ley Earl of Marlborough.
Thomas Savage Earl Rivers.
Nicholas Knowles Earl of Banbury.
Henry Mordant Earl of Peterborough.
Henry Grey Earl of Stamford.
Heneage Finch Earl of Winchelsea.
Charles Dormer Earl of Caernarvon.
Blount Earl of Newport.
Philip Stanhop Earl of Chesterfield.
John Tuston Earl of Thanet.
Thomas Weston Earl of Portland.
William Wentworth Earl of Stratford.
Robert Spencer Earl of Sunderland.

James

432 **The present State**

James Savil Earl of *Suffex*.
Charles Goring Earl of *Norwich*.
Nicholas Leake Earl of *Scarsdale*.
John Willmot Earl of *Rocheſter*.
Henry Fermin Earl of *St. Albans*.
Edward Montague Earl of *Sandwich*.
James Butler Earl of *Brecknock*.
Edward Hyde Earl of *Clarendon*.
Arthur Capel Earl of *Effex*.
Robert Brudnel Earl of *Cardigan*.
Arthur Anneſly Earl of *Angleſey*.
John Greenville Earl of *Bath*.
Charles Howard Earl of *Caerliſle*.
William Craven Earl of *Craven*.
Robert Bruce Earl of *Alisbury*.
Richard Boyle Earl of *Burlington*.

Vicounts.

Leiceſter Devereux Vicount *Hereford*.
Francis Brown Vicount *Montague*.
James Fiennes Vicount *Say and Seale*.
Edward Conway Vicount *Conway*.
Baptiſt Noel Vicount *Camden*.
William Howard Vicount *Stafford*.

Thomas

of England.

433

Thomas Bellasis Vicount *Falconbridge*.
John Mordant Vicount *Mordant*.
George Savil Vicount *Hallifax*.

Barons.

Nevil Lord Abergavenny.
James Touchet Lord *Audley*.
Charles Weſt Lord *de-la Ware*.
George Berkley Lord *Berkley*.
Thomas Parker Lord *Morley and Monteagle*.
Francis Lennard Lord *Dacres*.
Conyers Darcy Lord *Darcy and Meml*.
William Stourton Lord *Stourton*.
Lord Sandys de la Vine.
Thomas Windſor Lord *Windſor*.
Cromwel Lord *Cromwel*.
George Evre Lord *Evre*.
Philip Wharton Lord *Wharton*.
William Willoughby Lord *Willoughby of Parham*.
William Paget Lord *Paget*.
Dudley North Lord *North*.
William Bruges Lord *Chandois*.
William Petre Lord *Petre*.

V Charles

434 The present State

Charles Gerard Lord Gerard.
 Charles Stanhop Lord Stanhop.
 Henry Arundel Lord Arundel of
 Warder.
 Christopher Rooper Lord Tenham.
 Robert Grevil Lord Brooke.
 Edward Montague Lord Montague
 of Boughton.
 William Grey Lord Grey of Wark.
 John Roberts Lord Roberts.
 John Lovelace Lord Lovelace.
 John Pawlet Lord Pawlet.
 William Mainard Lord Mainard.
 George Coventry Lord Coventry.
 Edward Lord Howard of Efrick.
 Charles Mohun Lord Mohun.
 William Butler Lord Butler.
 William Herbert Lord Powis.
 Edward Herbert Lord Herbert of
 Cherbury.
 Seymour Lord Seymour.
 Francis Newport Lord Newport.
 Thomas Leigh Lord Leigh of Stone-
 ley.
 Christopher Hatton Lord Hatton.
 Richard Byron Lord Byron.
 Richard Vaughan Lord Vaug

Francis

of England.

Francis Carrington Lord Carrington.
 William Widdrington Lord Wid-
 drington.
 Humble Ward Lord Ward.
 Thomas Lord Culpeper.
 Isaac Astley Lord Astley.
 John Lucas Lord Lucas.
 John Bellasis Lord Bellasis.
 Edward Watson Lord Rockingham.
 Charles Gerard Lord Gerrard of
 Brandon.
 Gilbert Sutton Lord Lexington.
 Charles Kirkhoven Lord Wotton.
 Marmaduke Langdale, Lord Lang-
 dale.
 William Crofts Lord Crofts.
 John Berkley Lord Berkley of Strat-
 ton.
 Densel Holles Lord Holles.
 Charles Cornwallis Lord Cornwallis.
 George Booth Lord de la Mere.
 Horatio Townsend Lord Townsend.
 Anthony Ashley Cooper Lord Ashley.
 John Crew Lord Crew, &c.
 Henry Bennet Lord Arlington.
 John Frescheville Lord Frescheville.
 Richard Arundel Lord Arundel of
 Trerice. V 2 Thomas

436 The present State

Thomas Butler Lord Butler of More Park.

Henry Howard Lord Howard of Castle-rising.

Number. Of Temporal Lords or Peers of England, there are at present about 154, whereof there are 10 Dukes, 3 Marquisses, 56 Earls, 9 Vicounts, and 67 Barons; whereas within 70 years last past there was not one Duke, but one Marquis, about 19 Earls, 3 or 4 Vicounts, and 40 Lords.

Revenue. The Laws and Customs of England, alwayes willing that Decorum and Conveniency should be every where observed, and considering the Charges and Expences appertaining to the several Degrees of Honour, as they belong to men of Principal Service to the King and Realm, both in time of War and Peace, expected that each of them should have a convenient Estate and Value of Lands of Inheritance, for the support of their Honours and the Kings Service, There.

of England.

Therefore antiently when the intrinsic value of a Pound Sterling was worth 30 l. of our Money now, as appears by the then price of all things, every Knight was to have about 800 Acres, reckoned at 20 l. yearly in Land, that is, about 6000 l. of our Money at this day: A Baron to have 13 Knights Fees, and one third part, which amounted to about 267 l. which multiplied by 30, was as much as 8000 l. a year at this day. An Earl 20 Knights Fees, and a Duke 40. And in case of decay of Nobility, or that they had so far wasted their Revenues, that their Honours could not decently be maintained (as the Roman Senators were in such case removed from the Senate) so sometimes some English Barons have not been admitted to sit in the Higher House of Parliament, though they kept the Name and Title of Dignity still.

For the better support of these Degrees of Honour, the King doth usually

438 The present State

usually upon the Creation of a Duke Marquis, Earl, or Vicount grant an Annuity or yearly Rent to them and their Heirs, which is so annexed to the Dignity, that by no Grant, Assurance, or any manner of Alienation can be given from the same, but is still incident to, and a support of the same Dignity; contrary to that Principle in Law, *That every Land of Fee-simple may be charged with a Rent in Fee-simple by one way or other.*

To a Duke the King grants 40*l.* heretofore a considerable Pension, to a Marquis 40 Marks, to an Earl 20*l.* and to Vicount 20 Mark. To Barons no such Pensions are ordinarily granted, onely the late King creating *Montjoy Blount* (the late Earl of *Newport*) Lord *Mountjoy* of *Thurlston*, granted him a Fee of 20 Marks *per annum* to him and his heirs for ever.

As the King of *England* hath ever had the repute of the richest in Domains of any King in *Europe*; so
the

of England.

439

the Nobility of *England* have been accounted the richest in Lands of any Neighbouring Nation; some having above 20000*l.* yearly, others 15000*l.* and so many of them above ten, that if one with another they have but 8000*l.* yearly, it will amount to in all amongst the 154 Lords above Twelve hundred thousand pounds a year, about the eleventh part of the yearly Revenue of all *England*, which upon computation is found to be about Fourteen Millions yearly.

The English Nobility for Valour, Wisdom, Integrity, and Honour, hath in all former Ages been equal to any in Christendom.

Every Lords House was a kind of well-disciplin'd Court, in so much that the Gentry, Males and Females, were wont to be sent thither for virtuous breeding, and returned excellently accomplisht.

At home their Table Attendance, Officers, Exercises, Recreations, Garb, was an Honour to the Nation.

V 4

Abroad

440 **The present State**

Abroad they were attended with as brave, numerous, and uniform Train of Servants and Followers as any in *Europe*; not thinking it consistent with their Honours to be seen walk the Streets almost in *Cuerpo* with one Lacquey, or not that, much less to be found drinking in a Tavern, &c.

If some of the English Nobility by a long continued Peace, excessive Luxury in Diet, want of Action, &c. were before the late Wars born more feeble in body than their Ancestors, and by too fine and too full Diet, afterwards were rendered weaker in mind, and then during the late troubles by much licentiousness and want of fit Education, were so debauched, that it was lately difficult to find (as some are bold to affirm) the Courage, Wisdom, Integrity, Honour, Sobriety, and Courtesie of the Ancient Nobility; yet is it not to be doubted, but that under a Warlike Enterprising Prince all those

of England.

441

those vertues of their Fore-fathers may spring afresh.

CHAP. XIX.

Of the Third State or Commons of England, and therein of Baronets, Knights Esquires, Gentlemen, Yeomen, Citizens, Handycrafts, &c.

THe Law of *England*, contrary to the Laws and Customs of other Countries, calleth none Noble under a Baron; so that not only all Baronets, all sorts of Knights, all Esquires and Gentlemen, but also the Sons of the Nobility, are by our Law reckoned amongst the *Commons of England*; and therefore the eldest Son of a Duke, though by the *Courtesie of England* styled an Earl; yet shall be Arraigned by the Stile of Esquire only.

V 5 and

442 The present State

and may be tried by a Jury of *Common Freeholders*; and in Parliament can sit only in the *House of Commons*, if elected, till called by the *Kings Writ* to the *Lords House*. Yet doth it seem very absurd that all Noblemens Sons, with all Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen, should be esteemed *Plebeians*, but rather as in *Rome*, they were in a middle Rank, *inter Senatores & Plebem*; or else as in other Christian Kingdoms, they should be considered as the *Minor Nobilitas Regni*: so that as Barons and all above, may be stiled *Nobiles Majores*; so from a Baron downward to the Yeoman, all may be not unfitly stiled *Nobiles Minores*.

The Lower Nobility then of *England* consists of Baronets, Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen.

Baronets. The next Degree to Barons are Baronets, which is the lowest Degree of Honour that is Hereditary.

An

of England.

An Honour first instituted by King *James Anno 1611*, given by Patent to a Man and his Heirs Males of his Body lawfully begotten; for which each one is obliged to pay into the *Exchequer* so much money as will for 3 years at 8 *d. per diem*, pay 30 Foot Souldiers to serve in the Province of *Ulster* in *Ireland*, which sum amounts to 1095 *l.* which with Fees doth commonly arise to 1200 *l.*

Baronets have precedence before all Knights except Knights of the Garter, and Knights Bannerets, made under the Kings Banner or Standard, displayed in an *Army Royal* in open War, and the King personally present, or the Prince of *Wales*: Prince *Henry* by particular mention had liberty to Create Bannerets, See Mr. *Selden's* Titles of Honour.

Baronets have the Priviledge to bear in a Canton of their Coat of Arms, or in a whole Scutcheon the Arms of *Ulster*, viz. In a *Field Argent a Hand Gules*: also in the Kings Armies

444 The present State

Armies to have place in the grofs near the Kings Standard, with some other particulars for their Funerals.

The whole number of Baronets in *England* are not to exceed 200 at one and the same time; after which number compleated, as any for want of heirs come to be extinct, the number shall not be made up by new Creations, but be suffered to diminish; as appears by their Patent.

No Honour is ever to be created between Baronets and Barons.

The first Baronet that was created, was Sir *Nicholas Bacon* of *Suffolk*; whose Successor is therefore stiled *Primus Baronetorum Angliae*.

Knights. This Word *Knight* is derived from the German Word *Knecht*, signifying originally a *Lusty Servitor*.

The Germans (as the ancient Romans gave their young men *Togam Virilem*)

of England.

Virilem) by publick Authority bestowed on their young men able to manage Arms, a Shield and a Javelin; as fit for Martial Service, and to be a Member of the Commonwealth, accounted before but a part of a Family; and such a young man publickly allowed, they called *Knecht*: whence we had our Institution of Knighthood.

The thing *Knight* is at this day signified in *Latine, French, Spanish, Italian*, and also in the *High and Low Dutch* Tongues, by a Word that properly signifies a *Horseman*, because they were wont to serve in War on Horse-back, and were sometimes in *England* called *Radenyhts*, *id est, Riding Servitors*; yet our *Common Law* stiles them *Milites*, because they commonly held Lands in Knights Service to serve the King in his Wars as Soldiers.

The honour of Knighthood is commonly given for some personal desert, and therefore dies with the person deserving, and descends not to his Son. In

446 The present State

Knights
of the
Garter.

In England there are several sorts of Knights, whereof the chiefest are those of the Order of St. George, commonly called *Knights of the Garter*.

This Order is esteemed the most Honourable and most Antient of any now in use in *Christendom*. It began as appears in the Statutes of this Order, in 1350, and the 23th year of the Warlike and Puissant King *Edward 3.* who was Founder thereof, and at first made choice of the most Illustrious Persons of *Europe*, to be of that *Royal Society* (no doubt) upon a Martial, and not upon any such Amorous Account as a Garter falling from a Ladies Legge, which ridiculous Story, to the dishonour of the Order, was first fancied by *Polydore Virgil*; and since upon his credit taken up by many late Authors.

It was since commonly called, *The Order of the Garter*, because this only part of the whole Habit of the Order was made choice of at first

of England. 447

first to be constantly worn, and that to put in mind the Companions of the Order, that as by this Order they were joyned in a firm League of Amity and Concord, so by their Garter, as by a fast tye of affection, they were obliged to love one another. Now least this strict combination might seem to have any oither aime or end, but what was honourable and just; *ad obviandam malam interpretationem* (as the ancient Records of *Windsor* speak) the said King commanded that Motto or Impress to be wrought on the Garter, viz. *Honi soit qui mal y pense*.

The reason why this Motto was put in French, was because then the King of *England* being posselt of a great part of *France*, not only our Laws, Pleadings, and Sermons were in French, but that was the ordinary Language in the Court of *England*.

It appears by Antient Writings that this Honourable Company is a Col-

Colledge or Corporation, having a Great Seal belonging to it, and consisting of a Sovereign Guardian (which is always the King of *England*) and of 25 Companions called *Knights of the Garter*, of 14 Secular Canons, that are Priests; of 13 Vicars who are also Priests; of 26 poor Knights, who have no other Maintenance but the allowance of this Colledge, which is given them in respect of their Prayers, to the Honour of God and of *St. George*, who is the Patron of *England* and of this Order in particular; and none of those Fabulous *St. Georges* as some have vainly fancied; but that famous Saint and Soldier of Christ *St. George of Cappadocia*, a Saint so universally received in all parts of *Christendom*, so generally attested by the Ecclesiastical Writers of all Ages from the time of his Martyrdom till this day, that no one Saint in all the Calendar (except those attested by Scripture) is better evidenced.

There

There be also certain Officers belonging to this Order; as the Prelate of the Garter, which Office is settled on the Bishoprick of *Winchester*. A Chancellour of the Garter; A Register, who of latter times hath been constantly the Dean of *Windsor*, though antiently it was otherwise. The Principal King at Arms called *Garter*, whose chief function is to manage and marshal their Solemnities at their Installations and Feasts. Lastly, The Usher of the Garter.

There are also certain Orders and Constitutions belonging to this Society touching the Solemnities in making these Knights, their Duties after Creation, and their high Priviledges, too long for this place.

The Colledge is seated in the Castle of *Windsor*, with the Chappel of *St. George*, there erected by King *Edward 3.* and the Chapter-House.

The

450 The present State

The Order of the Garter is wont to be bestowed upon the most excellent and renowned Persons for Honour and Vertue ; and with it a Blew Garter deckt with Gold, Pearl, and Pretious Stones, and a Buckle of Gold, to be worn daily on the Left Leg ; also at High Feasts they are to wear a Surcoat, a Mantle, a high Black Velvet Cap, a Collar of pure Gold, composed of Roses enamel'd Red, within a Garter enamel'd Blew, with the usual Motto in Letters of Gold, and between each of these Garters a Knot with Tassels of Gold, together with other Stately and Magnificent Apparel.

They are not to be seen abroad without their Garter upon their Left Leg, upon pain of paying 2 Crowns to any Officer of the Order who shall first claim it ; only in taking a Journey a Blew Ribbon under the Boot doth suffice.

Upon the Left Shoulder, upon Cloak, Coat, or Riding Cassack in all

of England.

all places of Assembly, when they wear not their Robes, they are to wear an Escutcheon of the Arms of St. George, that is, a Cross with a Garter, and this by an Order made April 1626. That Ornament and Embellishment about the said Escutcheon now worn, and called the Star or rather the Sun in its Glory ; was at the same time enjoyned.

The greatest Monarchs of *Christendom* have been enrolled, and have taken it for an Honour to be of this Order.

There have been of this Order since the Institution 8 Emperours, 27 or 28 Foreign Kings, besides many Sovereign Princes, &c.

The

The Fellows and Companions of the Most Noble Order of St. George, are at present these that follow, ranked according as they are seated in their several Stalls at Windsor.

In the first Stall on the right hand is the *Sovereign* of the Order King *Charles* the Second, who is Patron and Sole Disposer of the Order.

In the other Stalls on the *Sovereign's* side are thus placed these that follow: 2. *Christian* 5th King of *Denmark*, 3 The Duke of *York*, 4 Prince *Rupert*, 5 Marquiss of *Brandenbourg's*, 6 Duke of *Buckingham*, 7 Earl of *Bristol*, 8 Count *Marfin*, 9 Earl of *Sandwich*, 10 Duke of *Richmond*, 11 Earl of *Strafford*, the 12th and 13th Stalls are void. On the other side, opposite

opposite to these afore-named, are placed in this Order these that follow: 1 *Charles* the 11th of that Name, King of *Sweden*; 2 Prince Elector *Palatine*, 3 Prince of *Orange*, 4 Duke of *Saxony*, 5 Duke of *Ormond*, 6 Duke of *Newcastle*, 7 Prince of *Tarent*, 8 Earl of *Oxford*, 9 Earl of *Manchester*, 10 Duke of *Monmouth*, 11 Duke of *Albemarle*, the 12th and 13th Stalls on this side are void at present.

Note, That antiently Kings and Sovereign Princes were placed according to their Creations, but now those only are placed according to their Degrees.

The whole number of Fellows of this Order is not to exceed 26.

In the next place are *Knights Knights Bannerets, Equites Vexilliferi*, antiently a high Honour, now obsolete; there being at this time none of this Order in *England*.

These

454 **The present State**

These may bear their Arms with Supporters , and none under this Degree.

Knights of the Bath. *Knights of the Bath*, so called of their *Bathing* used before they are created. The first of this sort were made by *Henry 4th. Anno 1399.* They are now commonly made at the Coronation of a King or Queen, or Creation of a Prince of *Wales.* They wear a Scarlet Ribbon Belt-wise. They are still made with much Ceremony, too long here to be described.

Knights Batchelors. Other Knights called *Equites Aurati*, from the Gilt Spurs usually put upon them, and Knights Batchelors, *quasi Bachevaliers*, Knights of lower Degree. So Batchelors in Arts or Divinity, *quasi* Low Knights or Servitors in Arts. These were antiently made by girding with a Sword and Gilt Spurs, and was bestowed onely upon Sword-men for their Military Service,

of England. 455

vice, and was reputed an excellent and glorious Degree, and a Noble Reward for courageous Persons, but of late being made more common, and bestowed upon Gown Men, contrary to the nature of the thing (as Degrees in the University are sometimes bestowed upon Sword-men) it is become of much less reputation. Yet amongst Gownmen it is given only to Lawyers and Physitians, and not to Divines, who may as well become that Dignity, and be Spiritual Knights as well as Spiritual Lords.

These are now made with no other Ceremony but kneeling down, the King with a drawn Sword lightly toucheth them on the Shoulder, after which heretofore the King said in French, *Sois Chevalier au nom de Dieu*, and then *Avances Chevalier.*

When a Knight is to suffer death for any foul Crime, his Military Girdle is first to be ungirt, his Sword taken away, his Spurs cut off

456 **The present State**

off with an Hatchet, his Gantlet pluckt off, and his Coat of Arms reversed.

Next amongst the Lower Nobility are *Esquires*, so called from the French word *Escuyers*, *Scutigeri*, because they were wont to bear before the Prince in war, or before the better sort of Nobility a Shield, or else perhaps because they bear a Coat of Arms as Ensigns of their descent; and by our Lawyers are called *Armigeri*.

Of this Title are first all Vicounts eldest Sons, and all Vicounts and Barons younger Sons; and by the Common Law of *England* all the Sons of Earls, Marquisses, and Dukes, are Esquires and no more. Next are the Esquires of the Kings Body, mentioned among the Officers of the Kings Court; after these are reckoned Knights eldest Sons, and their eldest Sons for ever, then younger Sons of the elder Sons of Barons; next Esquires created by the King by putting about their

Necks

of England.

Necks a Collar of Esses, and bestowing on them a pair of Silver Spurs, Lastly, any that are in superiour publick Office for King or State, are reputed Esquires, or equal to Esquires, as Justices of the Peace, Mayors of Towns, so Councillors at Law, Batchelors of Divinity, Law, or Physick, although none of them really are so.

In the last place, among the low-*Gentle-*er Nobility are accounted the *Gen-man.*try of *England*, that have no other Title, but are descended of antient Families, that have always born a Coat of Arms.

This kind of Honour is derived from the Germans to the rest of *Christendom*, and was never known in any Country where the German Customs were unknown, as in *Asia*, *Affrica*, and *America*. The Germans antiently warring oft amongst themselves, painted their Scutcheons with the Picture of

X

some

458 The present State

some Beast, Bird, or other thing for distinction, and put some eminent and visible Mark upon the Crest of their Helmets, and this Ornament both of Arms and Crest descended by inheritance to their Children, to the eldest pure, and to the rest with some note of distinction, such as the Old Master of Ceremonies, in High Dutch *Herald*, now *Herald* thought fit.

Gentlemen well descended and well qualified, have always been of such repute in *England*, that none of the higher Nobility, no nor the King himself have thought it unfitting to make them sometimes their Companions.

The Title of Gentleman in *England* (as of Cavalier in *France*, *Italy*, and *Spain*) is not disdained by any Nobleman. All Noblemen are Gentlemen, though all Gentlemen are not Noblemen.

The State of Gentry was antiently such, that it was accounted an abasing of Gentry, to put their Sons

of England.

Sons to get their Living by Shop-keeping and our Law did account it a disparagement of a Ward in Chivalry to be married to a Shopkeepers Daughter, or to any meer Citizen; for Tradesmen in all Ages and Nations have been reputed ignoble, in regard of the doubleness of their Tongue, without which they hardly grow rich (for *Nihil proficiunt nisi admodum mentiuntur*, as *Tully* observed; so the Son of *Sirach*, *Ecclus.* 26. 29. A Merchant shall hardly keep himself from doing wrong and an Huckster shall not be freed from sin:) and therefore amongst the *Thebans* no man was admitted to places of Honour or Trust, unless he had left off Trading ten years before: So by the Imperial Laws a Tradesman is not capable of any Honourable Estate, nor to be a Commander over Soldiers, and therefore the English Nobility and Gentry till within late years, judged it a stain and diminution to the honour and dignity

460 The present State

dignity of their Families, to seek their Childrens support by Shop-keeping, but only (as in all great Monarchies, by Military, Court, State, or Church Employments, much less to subject their Children to an Apprentisage, a perfect Servitude; for during that time, whatever they gain by their Masters Trade or their own wit, belongs all to their Master, neither can they lie out of their Masters House, nor take a Wife, nor Trade of their own, but subject to all Household Work, all Commands of their Master, undergo what punishment, and eat and wear what their Master pleaseth; which Marks of Slavery considered, Heralds are of opinion that a Gentleman thereby loses his Gentility for ever, till he can otherwise recover it; and yet, to the shame of our Nation, we have seen of late not only the Sons of Baronets, Knights, and Gentlemen, sitting in Shops, and sometimes of Pedling Trades, far more

fit

of England.

461

fit for Women and their Daughters, but also an Earl of the Kingdom subjecting his Son to an Apprentisage and Trade; but the folly of the English in swerving from their Ancestors herein (as in other things) is now apparent, for those young Gentlemen possessing more noble and active spirits, could not brook such dull slavish lives, and being thereby unfitted for other employments, have generally taken ill debauched courses.

The true English Nobility and Gentry have in all times made it their main aim to endow their Sons with such accomplishments especially as might render them capable to defend their Countrey in time of War; and to govern it in times of Peace; for which two things all Gentlemen seem to be born, and therefore their chief Studies have ever been that of the Great Emperour *Justinian*, and should be of all Princes and Nobles, viz. *Domus Le-ges & foris Arma quam optime callere.*

X 3

Pri-

462 The present State

Priviledges.

The lower Nobility of England have fewer and less Priviledges than those in other Monarchies.

Some few Priviledges belong to Knights, *quatenus* Knights. If a Knight be a *Minor*, yet shall he be out of Wardship both for Lands, Body, and Marriage; for though the Law doth judge him not able to do Knights Service till the Age of 21 years, yet the King being Sovereign and Supreme Judge of Chivalry, by dubbing him Knight, doth thereby allow him to be able to do him Knights Service.

Knights are excused from attendance at Court-Leets.

They and their eldest Sons not compellable to find Pledges at the *Visus Franci Plegii*.

Knights by *Magna Charta*, cap. 21. are so freed, that no Demesne Cart of theirs may be taken.

The

of England.

The Son and Brother of a Knight, by Statute Law, are capacitated to hold more than one Benefice with cure of Souls.

By the Stat. *Primo Jacobi* it seems that Knights and their Sons (though they cannot spend 10*l.* per annum, nor are worth 200 *l.*) may keep Greyhounds, Setting-Dogs, or Nets to take Pheasants or Partridges.

Some Priviledges also belong to Gentlemen. Antiently if an ignoble person did strike a Gentleman in *England*, he was to lose his hand.

A Gentleman by Stat. *Quint. Eliz.* may not be compelled to serve in Husbandry.

The Child of a Gentleman brought up to singing, cannot be taken without the Parents and Friends consent to serve in the *Kings Chappel*, as others may.

The Horse of a Gentleman may not be taken to ride Post.

X 4

Note,

Note, That as there are some Great Officers of the Crown, who for their Dignity and Worth of their Places, although they are not Noblemen, yet take place amongst the highest of the Higher Nobility; so there are some Persons who for their Dignities in the Church degrees, in the University, Offices in the State or Army, although they are neither Knights nor Gentlemen born, yet take place amongst them, So all Deans, Archdeacons, Chancellours, Prebends, Doctors of Divinity, Law, and Physick, Heads of Houses in the University, usually take place next to Knights, and before ordinary Esquires and Gentlemen.

Yet in other Christian Countries where the Civil Law hath its due credit in such Acts as concern Learning, a Doctor of Law hath precedence of a Knight; as also at Court in foreign parts, those Doctors that wait on the Prince, precede

cede the Knights who are servants to the Prince, but otherwise Knights usually take place of Doctors.

Likewise all Judges of Courts, Justices of the Peace.

All Commissionated Officers in the Army, as Colonels, Master of Artillery, Quarter-Master General, &c.

All higher Officers in the Kings Court or State.

All Sergeants at Law, &c. These are wont to precede Esquires.

All Batchelors of Divinity, Law, and Physick, all *Doctors* in the Arts, commonly-called Masters of Art, all Barresters in the Innes of Court, all Captains, divers other Officers in the Kings Household, &c. may equal, if not precede Gentlemen, that have none of those qualifications.

In *England* Gentry (as in *Germany* all Nobility) and Arms are held in *Gavelkind*, descending to all the

X 5 Sons

466 The present State

Sons alike, only the eldest Son beareth Arms without difference, which the younger may not,

Of the Lower Nobility in *England* the number is so great, that there are reckoned at present above 500 Baronets more than the first intended number; that is in all above 700, who are possess'd one with another of about 1200*l.* a year in Lands. Of Knights above 1400, who one with another may have about 800*l.* Lands a year. Of Esquires and Gentlemen above 6000, each one possess'd one with another of about 400*l.* a year in Lands, besides younger Brothers, whose number may amount to about 16000 in all *England*, who have small Estates in Lands, but are commonly bred up to Divinity, Law, Physick, to Court, and Military Employments, but of late too many of them to Shop-keeping.

The Lands in the possession of the Lower Nobility will amount to about

of England.

about four Millions and sixty thousand pounds yearly.

Next to the Lower Nobility and the first Degree of the Commons or Plebeans, are the Freeholders in *England*, commonly called Yeomen from the High Dutch *Gemen* or *Gemain*, in English *Common*; so in the Kings Court it signifieth an Officer, which is in a middle place between a Sergeant and a Groom, or else from the Low Dutch *Yeman*, *Some-body*, as the Spaniard calls a Gentleman *Hidalgo*, *Hijo d'algo*, that is, the Son of *Somebody*.

The Yeomanry of *England* having Lands of their own to a good value, and living upon Husbandry, are lookt upon as not apt to commit or omit any thing that may endanger their Estates and Credits, nor apt to be corrupted or suborned, &c. wherefore they are judged fit to bear some Offices, as of Constable, Churchwarden, to serve upon

Juries.

468 **The present State**

Juries, to be Train-Soldiers, to vote in the Election of Knights of the Shire for Parliament, &c.

In Cases and Causes the Law of *England* hath conceived a better opinion of the Yeomanry that occupy Lands, than of Tradesmen, Artificers or Labourers.

Husbandry hath in no Age rendered a Gentleman ignoble nor incapable of places of Honour.

Amongst the Romans some of the greatest Dictators and Consuls had been once Husbandmen, and some of them taken from Plowing their Ground, to bear those Highest Offices and Dignities; so divers Princes, Kings and Emperours, have exercised Agriculture, and the Grand *Scipio* and the Emperour *Dioclesian* left their Commands to enjoy Husbandry,

By the Statutes of *England* certain Immunities are given to Freeholders and landed men, though they are not Gentlemen: *Vide Stat. 1 Jacobi, cap. 27. & alibi.*

Of

of England.

469

Of the Free-holders in *England* there are more in number and richer than in any Countrey of the like extent in *Europe*, 40 or 50 *l.* a year a piece is very ordinary, 100 and 200 *l.* a year in some Counties is not rare, sometimes in *Kent* 1000 *l.* and 1500.

Besides these Freeholders (which are so called, because they hold Lands or Tenements inheritable by a perpetual Right to them and their heirs for ever) there are in *England* a very great number of Copyholders, who hold Lands within some Mannors only by Copy of Court Roll of the said Mannor, &c. and have *Jus perpetuum & utile Dominium*, though not *Allodium & directum Dominium*, which Freeholders may improperly be said to have but properly none in *England* but the King hath.

Amongst the Commons of *England* in the next place are reckoned Tradesmen, amongst whom Merchants of Forrein Traffick have for their

470 **The present State**

their great benefit to the publick, and for their great Endowments and generous living been of best repute in *England*, and although the Law of *England* look upon Tradesmen and Chapmen that live by buying and selling, as a baser sort of people, and that a Ward within age may bring his Action of Disparagement against his Guardian for offering any such in Marriage; yet in *England* as well as *Italy* to become a Merchant of Foreign Commerce, without serving any Apprentisage, hath been allowed no disparagement to a Gentleman born, especially to a younger Brother.

Amongst Tradesmen in the next place are Whole-sale-men, then Retailers, lastly Mechanicks, or Handy-craftsmen. These are all capable of bearing some Sway or Office in Cities and Towns Corporate.

The lowest Member, the Feet of the Body Politique, are the Day-Labourers,

of England.

471

Labourers, who by their large Wages given them, and the Cheapness of all Necessaries, enjoy better Dwellings, Diet, and Apparel in *England*, than the Husbandmen do in many other Countries.

Liberties and Properties.

As the Clergy and Nobility have certain Priviledges peculiar to themselves, so they have Liberties and Properties common to the Commonalty of *England*.

The Commons of *England* for Hereditary Fundamental Liberties and Properties are blest above and beyond the Subjects of any *Monarch* in the World.

First, No Freeman of *England* ought to be so imprisoned or otherwise restrained, without cause shewn for which by Law he ought to be so imprisoned.

Secondly, To him that is imprisoned, may not be denied a Writ of

472 **The present State**

of *Habeas Corpus*, if it be desired.

Thirdly, If no cause of Imprisonment be alledged, and the same be returned upon an *Habeas Corpus*, then the Prisoner ought to be set at liberty.

Fourthly, No Soldiers can be quartered in the House of any Freeman in time of Peace, without his will; though they pay for their quarters.

Fifthly, Every Freeman hath such a full and absolute propriety in Goods, that no Taxes, Loans, or Benevolences ordinarily and Legally can be imposed upon them, without their own consent by their Representatives in Parliament. Moreover, They have such an absolute Power, that they can dispose of all they have how they please, even from their own Children, and to them in what inequality they will; without shewing any cause: which other Nations governed by the Civil Law, cannot do.

Sixthly,

of England.

Sixthly, No Englishman may be prest or compelled (unless bound by his Tenure) to March forth of his County) to serve as a Soldier in the Wars, except in case of a Foreign Enemy invading, or a Rebellion at home. Nor may he be sent out of the Realm against his will upon any Forreign Employment by way of an honourable Banishment.

Seventhly, No Freeman can be tried but by his Peers, nor condemned but by the Laws of the Land, or by an Act of Parliament.

Eighthly, No Freeman may be fined for any Crime, but according to the Merit of the Offence, always *salvo sibi contentamento suo*, in such manner that he may continue and go on in his Calling.

Briefly, If it be considered only that ordinarily they are subject to no Laws but what they make themselves, nor no Taxes but what they im-

impose themselves, and pray the King and Lords to consent unto, their Liberties and Properties must be acknowledged to be transcendent, and their worldly condition most happy and blessed; and so far above that of the Subjects of any of our Neighbour Nations, that as all the Women of *Europe* would run into *England* (the Paradise of Women) if there were a Bridge made over the Sea: so all the Men too, if there were but an Act for a general Naturalization of all Aliens.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

Of the Women of England.

TOUCHING the Women of *England*, there are divers things considerable in the English Laws and Customs; Women in *England*, with all their Moveable Goods, so soon as they are Married, are wholly in *potestate viri*, at the will and disposition of the Husband.

If any Goods or Chattels be given to Feme Covert to a Married Woman, they all immediately become her Husbands. She cannot let, set, sell, give away, or alienate any thing, without her Husbands consent.

Her very Necessary Apparel by the Law is not hers in property. If she hath any Tenure at all, it is *in Capite*, that is, she holds it of and by

476 The present State

by her Husband, who is *Caput mulieris*; and therefore the Law saith *Uxor fulget radiis mariti.*

All the Chattels personal the Wife had at the Marriage, is so much her Husbands, that after his death they shall not return to the Wife, but go to the Executor or Administrator of the Husband, as his other Goods and Chattels, except only her *Parapherna*, or *præter dotalia*, which are her Necessary Apparel; which with the consent of her Husband she may devise by Will; not otherwise by our Law; because the property and possession even of the *Parapherna* are in him.

The Wife can make no Contract without her Husbands consent, and in Law matters *sine viro respondere non potest.*

The Law of *England* supposes a Wife to be in so much Subjection and Obedience to her Husband, as to have no will at all of her own: Wherefore if a Man and his Wife

COR-

of England.

commit a Felony together, the Wife by the Law can be neither Principal nor Accessary, the Law supposing that in regard of the subjection and obedience she owes to her Husband, she was necessitated thereunto.

The Law of *England* supposes in the Husband a power over his Wife, as over his Child or Servant, to correct her when she offends; and therefore he must answer for his Wives faults, if she wrong another by her Tongue or by Trespas, he must make satisfaction.

So the Law makes it as high a Crime, and allots the same punishment to a Woman that shall kill her Husband, as to a Woman that shall kill her Father or Master, and that is Petty Treason, and to be burnt alive.

So that a Wife in *England* is *de jure* but the best of Servants, having nothing her own in a more proper sense than a Child hath, whom his Father suffers to call many things

478 The present State

things his own, yet can dispose of nothing.

The Woman upon Marriage loseth not onely the power over her person and her will, and the property of her Goods, but her very Name; for ever after she useth her Husbands Surname, and her own is wholly laid aside; which is not observed in France and other Countries, where the Wife subscribes her self by her Paternal Name; as if Susanna the Daughter of R. Clifford be married to E. Chamberlayne, she either writes her self Susanna Clifford, or else Susanna Clifford Chamberlayne.

Notwithstanding all which, their condition *de facto* is the best in the World; for such is the good nature of Englishmen towards their Wives, such is their tenderness and respect, giving them the uppermost place at Table and elsewhere, the right hand every where, and putting them upon no drudgery and hardship, that if there were a Bridge over into Eng-
land

of England.

land as aforesaid, it is thought all the Women in Europe would run thither.

Besides in some things the Laws of England are above other Nations so favourable to that Sex, as if the Women had voted at the making of them.

If a Wife bring forth a Child during her Husbands long absence, though it be for some years, yet if he lived all the time within this Island, he must Father that Child; and if that Child be her first Son, he shall inherit that Husbands Estate if entailed, or left without Will.

If a Wife bring forth a Child begotten by any other before Marriage, but born after Marriage with another Man, he must own the Child, and that Child shall be his Heir at Law.

The Wife after her Husbands death, having no Jointure settled before Marriage, may challenge the third part of his yearly Rents of Lands during her life, and within the

480 The present State

the City of London a third part of all her Husbands moveables for ever.

As the Wife doth participate of her Husbands Name, so likewise of his Condition. If he be a Duke, she is a Dutcheſs; if he be a Knight, she is a Lady; if he be an Alien made a Deniſon, she is *ipſo facto* ſo too. If a Freeman marry a Bondwoman, she is alſo free during the Coverture; wherefore alſo it is ſaid as before, *Uxor fulget radiis Mariti.*

All Women in England are comprised under Noble or Ignoble.

Noble women are ſo three manner of wayes, viz. by Creation, by Deſcent, and by Marriage.

The King, the Fountain of Honour, may, and oft hath created Women to be Baroneſſes, Counteſſes, Dutcheſſes, &c.

By Deſcent ſuch Women are Noble, to whom lands holden by ſuch Dignity do deſcend as Heir; for Dignities and Titles of Honour for want of Males, do ſometimes deſcend to Females; but to one of them

of England.

them onely, becauſe they are things in their own nature entire, and not to be divided amongſt many (as the Lands and Tenements are which deſcend to all the Daughters equally;) beſides by dividing Dignities, the Reputation of Honour would be loſt, and the Strength of the Realm impaired; for the Honour and Chivalry of the Realm doth chiefly conſiſt in the Nobility thereof.

By Marriage all Women are Noble, who take to their Husbands any Baron or Peer of the Realm; but if afterwards they marry to Men not Noble, they loſe their former dignity, and follow the condition of their later Husband; for *eodem modo diſſolvitur earum Nobilitas, quo conſtituitur.* But Women Noble by Creation, or Deſcent, or Birth-right, remain Noble, though they marry Husbands under their degree; for ſuch Nobility is accounted *Character indelebilis*. Here note, that by the *Courteſe* of England a

Y Woman

482 The present State

Woman Noble onely by Marriage alwayes retaineth her Nobility; and so the Widow of a Knight married to any inferiour person, retaineth by Courtesie the Title and Name gotten by her former Husband; but if the Kings Daughter marry a Duke or an Earl, *illa semper dicitur Regalis*, as well by Law as Courtesie.

Noble-women in the eye of the Law are as Peers of the Realm, and are to be tried by their Peers, and to enjoy most other Priviledges, Honour, and Respect as their Husbands: Only they cannot by the opinion of some great Lawyers maintain an Action upon the Statute *De Scandalo Magnatum*, the Makers of that Statute meaning onely to provide in that Case for the Great Men, and not for the Women, as the words of that Statute seem to import. Likewise if any of the Kings Servants within his Check Roll should conspire the death of any Noblewoman, this were

of England.

were not Felony, as it is, if like Conspiracy be against a Nobleman.

None of the Wives Dignities can come by Marriage to their Husbands, although all their Goods and Chattels do; onely the Wives Dignities with her Lands are to descend to her next Heir: yet is the Courtesie of *England* such, that as the Wife for her Dower hath the third part of her Husbands Lands during her life; so the Husband for the Dignity of his Sex; and for getting his Wife with Child, (which must appear by being born alive) shall have all his Wives Lands (for his Dower, if it may be so called) during his Life.

By the Constitutions of *England* married persons are so fast joyned, that they may not be wholly separated by any agreement between themselves, but only by Sentence of the Judge, and such separation is either *a Vinculo Matrimonii*, and that is *ob pre-contractum, vel ob contractum per metum effectum, vel ob*

484 **The present State**

frigiditatem, vel ob affinitatem, five Consanguinitatem, vel ob Severitiam; or else such separation is a Mensa & Thoro, and that is ob Adulterium.

The Wife in *England* is accounted so much one with her Husband, that she cannot be produced as a Witness for or against her Husband.

CHAP. XXI.

of Children.

THe Condition of Children in *England* is different from those in our Neighbour Countries.

As Husbands have a more absolute Authority over their Wives and their Estates, so Fathers have a more absolute Authority over their Children. Fathers may give all their Estates un-intailed from their own Children, and all to any one Child, and none to the rest; the consideration

of England. 485

tion whereof keeps the Children in great awe.

Children by the Common Law of *England* are at certain ages enabled to perform certain Acts.

A Son at the Age of 14 may choose his Guardian, may claim his Lands holden in *Socage*, may consent to Marriage, may by Will dispose of Goods and Chattels.

At the Age of 15 he ought to be sworn to his Allegiance to the King.

At 21 he is said to be of full Age, may then make any Contracts, may pass not only Goods but Lands by Will, which in other Countries may not be done till the *Annus consistentie*, the Age of 25. when the heat of youth is somewhat abated, and they begin to be staid in mind as well as in growth.

A Daughter at 7 years is to have aid of her Fathers Tenants to marry her, for at those years she may consent to Marriage, though she may afterwards dissent. Y 3 At

486 **The present State**

At 9 she is Dowable, as if then, or soon after she could *virum sustinere*, and thereby *Dotem promereri*.

At 12 she is enabled to ratifie and confirm her former consent given to Matrimony, and if at that Age she dissent not, she is bound for ever; she may then make a Will of Goods and Chattels.

At 14 she might receive her Lands into her own hands, and was then out of Wardship, if she was 14 at the death of her Ancestor.

At 16 (though at the death of her Ancestor she was under 14) she was to be out of Wardship; because then she might take a Husband who might be able to perform Knights-service.

At 21 she is enabled to contract or alienate her Lands by Will or otherwise.

The Eldest Son inherits all Lands, and to the Younger Children are disposed Goods and Chattels, and commonly the Eldest Son's Wives Portion; and besides they are carefully

of England.

487

fully educated in some Profession or Trade.

If there be no Son, the Lands as well as Goods are equally divided amongst the Daughters.

CHAP. XXII.

of Servants.

THE Condition of Servants in *England* is much more favourable than it was in our Ancestors dayes, when it was so bad, that *England* was called the Purgatory of Servants, as it was and is still the Paradise of Wives, and the Hell for Horses.

Ordinary Servants are hired commonly for one year, at the end whereof they may be free (giving warning 3 Moneths before) and may place themselves with other Masters; onely it is accounted discourteous and unfriendly to take

Y 4 ano-

488 The present State

another Mans Servant, before leave given by his former Master ; and indiscreet to take a Servant without Certificate of his diligence, and of his faithfulness in his Service to his former Master.

All Servants are subject to be corrected by their Masters and Mistresses, and resistance in a Servant is punished with severe penalty; but for a Servant to take away the life of his or her Master or Mistress, is accounted a Crime next to High-Treason, and called Petty Treason, and hath a peculiar Punishment Capital.

Foreign Slaves in *England* are none, since Christianity prevailed. A Foreign Slave brought into *England*, is upon landing *ipso facto* free from Slavery, but not from ordinary service.

Some Lands in *England* are holden in *Villanage*, to do some particular Services to the Lord of the Mannor, and such Tenants may be called the Lords Servants.

There

of England.

There is a Twofold Tenure called Villanage, one where the Tenure onely is servile, as to plow the Lords ground, sow, reap, and bring home his Corn, dung his Land, &c. the other whereby both Person and Tenure is servile, and bound in all respects at the disposition of the Lord; such Persons are called in Law pure Villains, and are to do all Villanous Services to improve the Land he holds to the Lords use, themselves to be wholly at the Lords Service, and whatever they get is for their Lord; of such there are now but few left in *England*. The nearest to this condition are Apprentices (that signifies *Learners*) a sort of Servants that carry the Marks of pure Villains or Bond-slaves (as before in the Chapter of Gentry is intimated) differing however in this, that Apprentices are Slaves only for a time and by Covenant; the other are so at the will of their Masters.

Y 5 CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

of the ROYAL SOCIETY.

HAVING in this small Treatise had occasion to make known to the World by *Name* our Princes, Prelates, Nobles, Great Officers of State, Privy Counsellours, Principal Courtiers, our Judges, Serjeants at Law, Civilians, &c. all now living, it will not be altogether impertinent to add hereunto not only the Names of all those worthy Governours and eminent Professors in our two famous Universities, but also all those who of late have lifted themselves for promoting that admirably ingenious design for bettering the condition of humane life by a vigorous Advancement of Real Knowledge, and a speedy Improvement of Arts and Sciences: of whose Beginning, Progress, and many

many very useful Discoveries already made, see that excellent History written by Dr. *Sprat*, since the publishing whereof divers other profitable and ingenious inventions have also been produced by some of that Society, and will be made publick in due time.

A LIST of the
ROYAL SOCIETY
in Alphabetical Order.

HIS Sacred Majesty King
Charles the Second, Founder
and Patron.
His Royal Highness *James* Duke of
York.
His Highness Prince *Rupert*, Count
Palatine of the *Rhine*.
His Highness *Ferdinand Albert*
Duke of *Brunswick* and *Lune-*
burg.

Robert

A.

Robert Earl of Alesbury.
 Archibald Earl of Argyle.
 James Earl of Anglesey.
 James Lord Annesley.
 William Aglonby M. D.
 James Alderne M. A.
 Thomas Allen M. D.
 Elias Ashmole Esquire.
 Sir Robert Atkins Knight.
 Monsieur Adrian Anzout.
 John Aubrey Esquire.

B.

George Duke of Buckingham.
 William Lord Vicount Brounker.
 William Lord Brereton.
 Sir John Banks Knight and Baronet.
 Nicholas Bagnal Esquire.
 Thomas Bains M. D.
 William Balle Esquire.
 Peter Balle M. D.
 Isaac Barrow B. D.
 Ralph Bathurst D. D.
 John Beal D. D.
 Victor Beaufort.

Vabres

Vabres de Fresars.
 Monsieur Theodore de Berington.
 Sir Charles Berkley Knight of the Bath.
 Sir John Berkenhead Knight.
 Robert Boyle Esquire.
 John Brook Esquire.
 Edward Brown M. D.
 David Bruce M. D.
 Monsieur Ismael Bullialdus.
 Mr. Gilbert Burnet.
 Sir Edward Bylbe Knight.

C.

Gilbert L. Archbishop of Canterbury.
 Edward Earl of Clarendon.
 Charles Earl of Carlisle.
 John Earl of Crafford and Lindsey.
 John Lord Bishop of Chester.
 William Lord Cavendish.
 Charles Lord Clifford.
 Mr. James Cankesse.
 Dr. George Castle D. D.
 Sir Philip Carteret.
 Edward Chamberlayn L. L. D.
 Sir Winston Churchill Knight.
 Henry Clerk M. D.

Timothy

494 The present State

Timothy Clerk M. D.
 Sir John Clayton Knight.
 Sir Clifford Clifton Knight.
 George Cock Esquire.
 Collonel Thomas Collepeyr.
 Mr. John Collins.
 John Colwal Esquire.
 Daniel Colwal Esquire.
 Sir Richard Corbet Knight.
 Edward Cotton D. D. A. D. of Corn.
 Peter Courtoffe Esquire.
 Thomas Cox M. D.
 Thomas Cox Esquire.
 Daniel Cox Esquire.
 John Creed Esquire.
 Thomas Crispe Esquire.
 William Croon M. D.
 Sir William Curtius Knight and Bar.
 Sir John Cutler Knight and Baronet.

D.

Henry Marquis of Dorchester.
 William Earl of Devonshire.
 Edward Earl of Dorset.
 Monsieur Vital de Damas.
 John Downes M. D.

Ben

of England.

E.

Benjamin Lord Bishop of Ely.
 Andrew Ellise Esquire.
 Sir George Ent Knight.
 John Evelyn Esquire.

F.

Maurice L. Visc. Fitz-harding.
 Sir Francis Fane Kt of the Bath.
 Monsieur le Febure.
 Sir John Finch Knight.
 Henry Ford Esquire.

G.

Sir Bernard Gascon Knight.
 Joseph Glanvile B. D.
 Francis Glisson M. D.
 Jonathan Goddard M. D.
 Sir William Godolphin Knight.
 Captain John Graunt.
 Mr. James Gregory.

H.

Henry Lord Howard of Norfolk.
 Christopher Lord Hatt on.
 Theodore Haak Esquire.

William

496 The present State

William Hammond Esquire.
 William Harrington Esquire.
 Sir Erasmus Harby Baronet.
 Sir Edward Harley Kt of the Bath.
 Sir Robert Harley Knight.
 Thomas Harley Esquire.
 James Hayes Esquire.
 Nathaniel Henshaw M. D.
 Thomas Henshaw Esquire.
 John Hevelius Consul of Dantz.
 Abraham Hill Esquire.
 James Hoar Esquire.
 William Holder D. D.
 Robert Hook M. A.
 John Hoskins Esquire.
 Anthony Horneck M. A.
 Charles Hotham Esquire.
 Charles Howard of Norfolk.
 Edward Howard of Norfolk.
 William le Hunt Esquire.
 Monsieur Christian Huygens de Zu-
 lichem.

J.

Richard Jones Esquire. |

Alex.

of England.

K.

Alexander Earl of Kincardin.
 Edmund King M. D.

L.

Robert Earl of Lindsey Lord Great
 Chamberlain.
 Humphrey Lord Bishop of London.
 Thomas Lake Esquire.
 Sir Ellise Leighton Knight.
 Monsieur Leyenberg Resid. of Swed.
 John Leck Esquire.
 James Long Esquire
 Richard Lower M. D.
 Sir John Lowther.
 Anthony Lowther Esquire.
 Mo. Hugues Louys de Lyonne.

M.

Edward Earl of Manchester Lord
 Chamberlayn.
 Mr. Nicholas Mercator.
 Christopher Merret M. D.
 Sir Robert Moray Knight.
 Henry More D. D.
 Jaques du Molin M. D.

James

498 The present State

N.

James Earl of Northampton.
Jasper Needham M. D.
Walter Needham M. D.
Sir Paul Neil Knight.
Thomas Neile Esquire.
William Neile Esquire.
Edward Nelthrop Esquire.
John Newburgh Esquire.
Sir Thomas Nott Knight.

O.

Henry Oldenburg Esquire.
Nicholas Ondart Esquire.

P.

Henry Earl of Peterborough.
Philip Packer Esquire.
Samuel Parker M. A.
Sir Robert Paston Knight and Baronet.
John Peirson D. D.
John Pell D. D.
Samuel Pepys Esquire.
Sir William Persal Knight.
Monsieur Samuel Petit.

Sir

of England.

499

Sir William Petty Knight.
Sir Peter Pett Knight.
Peter Pett Esquire.
Walter Pope M. D.
Sir William Portman Knight and Baronet, and Knight of the Bath.
Francis Potter B. D.
Thomas Povey Esquire.
Henry Power M. D.
Sir Richard Powle Knight of the Bath.
Henry Powle Esquire.

R.

John Lord Roberts Lord Privy Seal.
John Lord Bishop of Rochester.
Colonel Bullen Reymes.
Thomas Rolt Esquire.
Paul Ricaut Esquire.

S.

Edward Earl of Sandwich.
William L. Vis. Stafford.
David L. Visc. Stermont.
Seth Lord Bishop of Salisbury.
William Schroter Esquire.
Sir James Shaen Kt and Baronet.

Philip

500 The present State

Philip Skippon Esquire,
Sir Nicholas Slanning Knight.
Henry Slingsby Esquire.
Francis Smethwick Esquire.
Edward Smith Esquire.
George Smith M. D.
William Soame Esquire.
Monsieur Samuel Sorbriere.
Sir Robert Southwel Knight.
Thomas Spratt M. A.
Alexander Stanhope Esquire.
Thomas Stanley Esquire.
Sir Nicholas Stewart Baronet.

T.

Sir Gilbert Talbot Knight.
John Earl of Tweedale.
Christopher Terne M. D.
Thomas Thynne Esquire.
Malachy Trustan M. D.
Sir Samuel Tuke Knight.

V.

Count Charles Ubaldino of Mount-
Feltre.
Sir Theodore de Vaux Knight.
Cornelius Vermuyden Esquire.
Monsieur Isaac Vossins.

George

of England.

W.

George Lord Bishop of Winton.
Edmund Waller Esquire.
John Wallis D. D.
Esay Ward M. A.
Edward Waterhouse Esquire.
Daniel Whistler M. D.
Joseph Williamson Esquire.
Thomas Willis M. D.
Francis Willoughby Esquire.
William Winde Esquire.
John Winthrop Esquire.
Samuel Woodford Esquire.
Benjamin Woodrooffe M. A.
John Wray M. A.
Matthew Wren Esquire.
Christopher Wren L. L. D.
Thomas Wren M. D.
Sir Cyril Wyche Knight.
Sir Peter Wyche Knight.
Edmund Wylde Esquire.

Y.

Richard L. A. B. of York.
John Lord Yester.

A

A List of the present COUNCIL of the ROYAL SOCIETY in Alphabetical Order.

William L. Viscount Brouncker
PRESIDENT.

Robert Earl of Alesbury.

Peter Ball M. D.

William Lord Brereton.

John Lord Bishop of Chester.

Daniel Colwall Esquire Treasurer.

John Creed Esquire.

Jonathan Goddard M. D.

Henry Lord Howard of Norfolk.

Charles Howard of Norfolk.

Thomas Henshaw Esquire, Secretary.

John Hoskins Esquire.

Edmund King M. D.

John Lock Esquire.

Sir

Sir Robert Moray Knight.

Sir Paul Neil Knight.

Henry Oldenburg Esquire.

Seth Lord Bishop of Salisbury.

George Smith M. D.

Sir Robert Southwell Knight.

Christopher Wren L. L. D.

By the fore-going List the Reader may perceive how many persons of different Degrees, Religions, Countreys, Professions, Trades, and Fortunes, have united and conspired to lay aside all Names of distinction, amicably to promote experimental knowledge.

At Arundel House (by the Bounty of the Right Honourable the Lord Henry Howard of Norfolk, is at present the place of their meeting, the time is every Thursday at four of the Clock in the afternoon.

At Gresham Colledge (in the Custody of that most ingenious discoverer and indefatigable Experimenter

menter Mr. Robert Hook is their Repository, the free and bountiful gift of Daniel Colwal Esquire, the present Treasurer of the said Society, wherein are to be seen many thousands of great Rarities, fetcht (some of them) from the farthest corners of the habitable World, as Beasts, Birds, Fishes, Serpents, Flyes, Shells, Feathers, Seeds, Minerals, Earths, some things petrified, others ossified, Mummies, Gummes, &c. divers of which have been since added by other worthy Members of that Society, and by other ingenious persons, and in a short time is like to be (if not already) one of the largest and most curious Collections of the Works of Nature in the World.

Touching their Library (the noble gift of the fore-mentioned Lord H. Howard) their Laboratories, intended Colledges, &c. account shall be given elsewhere.

The

The Names and Titles of the Governours of the several Colledges and Halls in Oxon.

Doctor Fell Dean of Christ-Church.

Dr. Pierce President of Magdalen-Colledge.

Dr. Woodward Warden of New-Colledge.

Dr. James Warden of All-Souls.

Sir Tho. Clayton Warden of Merton.

Dr. Newlin President of Corp. Christi.

Dr. Barlow Provost of Queens.

Dr. Mew President of St. Johns.

Dr. Bathurst President of Trinity.

Dr. Yates Principal of Brasen Nose.

Dr. Say Provost of Oriel.

Dr. Ironside Warden of Wadham.

Dr. Crew Rector of Lincoln.

Dr. Clayton Master of University-Colledge.

Dr. Berry Rector of Exeter.

Dr. Savage Master of Baliol.

Dr. Jenkins Principal of Jesus.

Mr. Hall Mr of Pembroke.

Z.

Dr.

Dr. *Hide* Principal of *Magd. Hall*.
 Dr. *Tully* Principal of *Edmund Hall*.
 Dr. *Lamplugh* Princ. of *Albon Hall*.
 Mr. *Stone* Princ. of *New-Inn*.
 Dr. *Eaton* Princ. of *Glocester-Hall*.
 Dr. *Crowder* Princ. of *St. Mary Hall*.
 Dr. *Lamphire* Princ. of *Hart Hall*.

The Names of the Professors and
 Lecturers in Oxon.

Reg. Professor Theologia Dr. *Al-*
lestry.
 Præl. Theol. *Domina Margarita*,
 Dr. *Barlow*.
 Reg. Professor Medic. Dr. *Hide*.
 Reg. Profes. Juris Civilis Dr. *Swett*.
 Pub. Orator. Dr. *South*.
 Lingua Hebraica P. Reg. Dr. *Pocock*.
 Lingua Greca Prof. Reg. Dr. *Levins*.
 Praelector Anatom. Dr. *Paris, C.C.C.*
 Praelector Historia Dr. *Lamphire*.
 Præl. Natural. Philos. Dr. *Willis*.
 Præl. Astron. Dr. *Wren*.
 Præl. Geomet. Dr. *Wallis*.
 Præl. Moral. Philos. Mr. *Hodges*,
 Ch. Clk. *A*

A Catalogue of the Masters of
 all the Colledges and Halls in
 the University of Cambridge.

ST Peters Coll. Dr. *Beaumont D.D.*
Clare Hall, Dr. *Dillingham, D.D.*
Pembroke Hall, Dr. *Mapletoft, D.D.*
Corpus Christi Colledge, alias *Benet*
Colledge, Dr. *Spencer D.D.*
Trinity Hall Dr. *King*, Dr. in Law.
Gonville & Caius Col. Dr. *Braddy*,
 Doctor in Physick.
Kings Colledge Dr. *Fleetwood, D.D.*
 and Provoft of the said Colledge.
Queens Colledge, Dr. *Wells, D.D.*
St. Katherines Hall, Dr. *Lightfoot, D.D.*
Jesus Colledge, Dr. *Baldero, D.D.*
Christ's Coll. Dr. *Cudworth, D.D.*
St. Johns Coll. Dr. *Turner, D.D.*
Magdalen Coll. Dr. *Dewport, D.D.*
Trinity Coll. Dr. *Pearson, D.D.*
Emanuel Coll. Dr. *Brixton, D.D.*
Suffex and Sidney Coll. Dr. *Minsbal,*
D.D.

The

The Names of the Publick Professors in the University of Cambridge.

Doctor *Gunning*, the Kings Professor in Divinity.

Dr. *Pierſon*, the Lady *Margaret's* Professor in Divinity.

Dr. *Clarke*, Professor in the Civil Law.

Dr. *Gliffon*, Professor in Physick.

Dr. *Witherington* Publick Orator.

Mr. *Barrow* the Mathematick Professor.

Dr. *Gudworth* the Hebrew Professor.

Mr. *Creiton* the Greek Professor.

Dr. *Caſel* Arabick Professor.

F I N I S.